RELIGION AND CULTURE OF THE JAINS

Edited by
D. C. SIRCAR
Carmichael Professor and Head of the Department of Ancient Indian History and Culture, University of Calcutta.

UNIVERSITY OF CALCUTTA
1973
FIRST PUBLISHED.............1973

Price Rs. 12-00.

PRINTED IN INDIA

PUBLISHED BY SRI SIBENDRANATH KANJILAL
SUPERINTENDENT, CALCUTTA UNIVERSITY PRESS,
48, HAZRA ROAD, CALCUTTA-19,

AND

PRINTED BY SRI A. P. SENGUPTA AT GRANTHA PARIKRAMA PRESS,
30/1B, COLLEGE ROW, CALCUTTA-9.
# CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Proceedings of the Seminar—Second Day</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. The Primitive in Jainism by Dr. L. B. Keny, St. Xaviers College, Bombay University.</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Jain Cosmography by Sm. Sudha Sengupta, Delhi University.</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. The Conception of Tirthankaras in Jain Mythology by Dr. A.N. Lahiri, Calcutta University.</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Some Festivals and Fasts of the Jains by Dr. Sm. Kshanika Saha, Calcutta University.</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. A Summary of Jain Philosophy by Sri R.K. Bhattacharya, Calcutta University.</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Jainism in Early Inscriptions of Mathurā by Sm. Kalyani Rajpeyi, Calcutta University.</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. An Unnoticed Jain Cavern near Madurantakam by Dr. Sm. R. Champakalakshmi, Madras University.</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Jainism in Toṇḍai-mañḍalam by Dr. Sm. R. Champakalakshmi, Madras University.</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. Varāhāmihira and Bhadrabāhu by Dr. Ajay Mitra Shastri, Nagpur University.</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. A Jain Historical Tradition by Prof. D.C. Sircar, Calcutta University.</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**SUPPLEMENT**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>11.</td>
<td>The Jain Harivansha by Dr. Asim Kumar Chatterjee, Calcutta University</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12.</td>
<td>Jainism and Jain Relics in Bihar by Dr. S.P. Singh</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13.</td>
<td>Beliefs and Practices in the Jain Sūtras by Sri Ramesh Kumar Billore, Calcutta University.</td>
<td>132</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDEX**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

**PLATES**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
PREFACE

The eighth annual series of two days' inter-university seminars was held at our Centre of Advanced Study in February, 1972, on (1) Early Indian Trade and Industry, and (2) Religion and Culture of the Jains. The proceedings of the seminar on the first day were published sometime ago, and those of the second day's seminar on Religion and Culture of the Jains, together with the papers presented on the occasion; are now placed in the hands of the students of ancient Indian history.

The proceedings have been drawn up, as usual, on the basis of notes submitted by the Reporters. The papers, edited without changing the authors' ideas as far as possible, have been roughly arranged on a chronological basis. The editing work had to be done in a hurry because of my impending retirement on the 31st July, 1972; but still I have tried to do my best within the short time at my disposal.

The index of this volume has been prepared by Dr. Sm. K. Saha, a Research Associate at the Centre.

Centre of Advanced Study, Dept. of Ancient Indian History and Culture, Calcutta University, 51/2, Hazra Road, Calcutta-19, 13th July, 1972.  

D. C. SIRCAR  
Director
Proceedings of the Seminar

Second Day

Date: 25th February, 1972.
Time: 10-30 A.M. to 1 P.M. and 2 to 5 P.M.
Subject: Religion and Culture of the Jains.
Place: Lecture Hall, Department of Ancient Indian History and Culture, Calcutta University.
Chairman: Prof. D. C. Sircar, Calcutta University.

Participants besides the Chairman:

1. Dr. L. B. Keny Bombay University
2. Dr. S. M. R. Champakalakshmi Madras University
3. Dr. G. B. Upreti Delhi University
4. S. M. Sengupta
5. Dr. O. P. Verma
6. Dr. A. M. Shastri Nagpur University
7. Dr. B. Srivastava
8. Dr. S. M. S. M. Devi
9. Dr. N. N. Acharya
10. Dr. P. K. Bhattacharya
11. Dr. S. M. B. Lahiri Patna University
12. Dr. A. N. Lahiri Gauhati University
13. Dr. S. Bandyopadhyay
14. S. R. K. Bhattacharya
15. Dr. S. M. K. Saha
16. Dr. A. K. Chatterjee
17. Dr. S. P. Singh
18. Sm. K. Bajpeyi

and others.

Reporters: Dr. Sm. J. Maitra
Sm. K. Bajpeyi
Morning Session

The seminar started at 10-30 A.M. when Dr. A. N. Lahiri was invited by the Chairman to read his paper on 'The Conception of Tirthaṅkaras in Jain Literature', in which he endeavoured to show the outward similarity and the fundamental difference between the Tirthaṅkara tradition of the Jains and the Avatāravāda of the Hindus. He said that Jainism developed in North-Eastern India out of a strong reaction against the caste-oriented and ritualistic Brāhmaṇism. This heterodox religion owed its origin to non-Brāhmaṇa religious thinkers. The most important aspect of the Tirthaṅkara legends is the attribution of a long life-span and supernatural powers to them and this differentiates them from the gods of the Hindu pantheon.

Prof. D.C. Sircar referred to the part played by imagination in Jain mythology and pointed out how the Jain writers excelled even the Purānic authors in introducing imaginary elements in their cosmographical speculations. He doubted the historicity of the tradition that Pārśvanātha flourished exactly 250 years before Mahāvīra and thought that the former flourished shortly before the latter. Dr. Lahiri wanted to know why the Tirthaṅkaras were regarded as 24 in number. Prof. Sircar considered it difficult to determine though it reminds one of caturviniṣṭa-stoma, caturviniṣṭati-smṛti, etc., the conception of the 24 forms of the god Viṣṇu being apparently associated with the Jain tradition regarding 24 Tirthaṅkaras. Dr. A. M. Shastri wanted to know as to which of these two concepts is earlier. Prof. Sircar pointed out the difficulty in determining the antiquity of the Jain tradition and was inclined to assign the Vaiṣṇava tradition to a date not earlier than the Gupta age. Dr. Sm. R. Champakalakshmi observed that the Periya Purāṇam, written in the 12th or 13th century A.D., mentions 63 Nāyānmars in imitation of the 63 Śālakāpuruṣas of the Jains.

Dr. Sm. R. Champakalakshmi next read her note on 'An Unnoticed Jain Cavern and Some Pallava Antiquities near
Madurantakam. A range of low hills, locally called Pañcapāṇḍavamalai, lies near Madurantakam in the Chingleput District, Tamilnadu. They contain some natural caverns with chiselled rock beds used by the Jain ascetics for several centuries in the first millennium A.D. On the Karuppankunrū rock, there are sculptures representing three Jain Tīrthaṅkaras, viz. Ādinātha, Pārśvanātha and Mahāvīra. An inscription on the same rock gives the name of the Jain teacher who caused the shrine to be made and was called ‘the founder of the 24’ (Caturvimāsi-sthāpaka). Dr. Sm. Champakalakshmi thought that the number 24 was sacred to the Jains and was often used by them to form ‘Committees of Twenty-four’ for religious and social purposes.

Sri R. K. Bhattacharya observed that the Hindus considered the number 24 as auspicious from early times since the Gāyatri-mantra consists of 24 syllables. Prof. Sircar, Dr. S. R. Das and others pointed out that there were several numbers regarded as auspicious in our early literature. Sri R. K. Bhattacharya then wanted to know whether there is any tradition connecting the Pañcapāṇḍavas with the above-mentioned hills. Sm. Champakalakshmi answered in the negative. Dr. L. B. Keny observed that many Buddhist caves were also named after the Pañcapāṇḍavas perhaps to denote their antiquity. Dr. S. R. Das agreed with Dr. Keny and said that everywhere in India ancient sites are associated with the epic heroes. Prof. Sircar pointed out that the South Indian Kistvaens are called Pāṇḍukūli or the Pañcavas’ mounds. He also pointed out that a locality at Nander to the south of the Godāvari is regarded by the local people as the place where Draupadi’s marriage took place. Prof. Sircar further observed that on the Kauleśvari hill near Huntergunge in the Hazaribag District in Bihar, Jain Tīrthaṅkara images engraved in relief are called the Pañḍava brothers by the local people.

Dr. A. K. Chatterjee then read his paper on ‘Jinasena’s Hariṇaṁśa’. Dr. Chatterjee pointed out that the work is similar to Somadeva’s Kathāsaritsāgara which is the Sanskrit translation of Guṇḍāhya’s Brhatkathā. Jinasena has described
in greater details the achievements of Kṛṣṇa-Vāsudeva and, in doing so, he has followed the Vaiṣṇava Harivamśa, but deliberately distorted the epic account and has offered a new version. He referred to the ruling dynasties and mentioned the names of contemporary kings. Of those families, Dr. Chatterjee said, the Khadgas ruled in East Bengal in the 7th century A.D. and the Mallas were probably the Mallas of Mahābodhi mentioned in an inscription of Dharmapāla. He further referred to the duration of Gupta rule given by Jinasena as 231 years and the mention of Karnasuvarna by the latter.

Dr. S. R. Das wanted to know the date of Jinasena. Dr. Chatterjee answered that the date is given by the author himself in the colophon of the work as Śaka 705, corresponding to 783 A.D. As regards the tradition about the duration of Gupta rule for 231 years, Prof. D. C. Sircar observed that the same tradition is mentioned side by side with another giving the duration as 255 years in the Jain work Tiloyapannatti by Jadi Vasaha and pointed out that both of them may be regarded as correct, the first suggesting the collapse of Gupta rule in U. P. about 550 A. D. and the latter pointing to its extirpation in Orissa about 574 A. D. Prof. Sircar further observed that the Mallas might be those of the age of the Buddha and doubted whether the Khadgas were the same as those ruling in Bengal. He did not believe that the Kathāsaritsāgara is an exact Sanskrit translation of Gūḍāḍhya’s Brhatkathā since the Vikramāditya section must have been later interpolated. He further pointed out that both the Buddhists and the Jains enjoyed distorting stories found in Brāhmaṇical literature.

Dr. A. M. Shastri next read his paper entitled ‘Varāhamihira and Bhadrabāhu’ in which he tried to prove that the contemporaneity of Śrutakevalin Bhadrabāhu and Varāhamihira contemplated by Merutunga and Rājaśekharasūri must be rejected as it goes against Varāhamihira’s own work. An examination of the available Bhadrabāhushumhitā proves that it has nothing to do with any of the personages bearing the name Bhadrabāhu and that it is later than Varāhamihira’s
Bhāsārṇhitā to which it is greatly indebted. The text, Dr. Shastri said, belongs to the Digambara sect of Jainism, though a critical examination of its contents reveals the fact that, in all probability, it was originally a Brāhmaṇical work and was given a Jain appearance at a later date by adding a few Jain elements here and there. Prof. D. C. Sircar observed that the Jain traditions regarding the contests between Bhadrabāhu and Varāhamihira remind one of similar traditions about the rivalry between Gūṇādhya and Śārvavarman as found in the Kathāsaritsāgara. Prof. Sircar also pointed out how Varāhamihira is associated with Vikramāditya in some traditions and with the Nandas in others though there was no king named Vikramāditya before the Gupta age. Dr. Shastri said that the Digambara tradition connects Bhadrabāhu with Candragupta Maurya and the Śvetāmbara tradition with the Nandas, so that Varāhamihira, mentioned as a contemporary of Bhadrabāhu, is placed by them in the same age. Dr. Upreti did not accept the idea that Varāhamihira superseded Āryabhata. Dr. Shastri did not consider the point as relevant to his paper. Dr. S. R. Das wanted to know when the Magas came to India, because Varāhamihira is referred to by Dr. Shastri as a Maga Brāhmaṇa. Prof. Sircar and Dr. Shastri thought that the Magas came to India with the Scythians who entered the Indus Valley from Eastern Iran. Prof. Sircar observed that, in the second century A.D., Ptolemy mentions the Maga-Brāhmaṇas settled even in the Far South of India.

Sm. S. Sengupta next read her paper on 'Jain Cosmography'. She dealt with the Jain theory of the origin and shape of the universe. Jain cosmography, she pointed out, is based on the ideas of the Brāhmaṇical Purāṇas, but is represented as different from them in certain respects. The Jains criticised the Brāhmaṇical and Buddhist viewpoints, according to which the world is created and destroyed by reason of the combination and disintegration of a number of elements (jāda) and consciousness (cetana), which are eternal. Prof. Sircar observed that the Jains exhibited a passion for
exaggerating the imaginary details of their cosmography more conspicuously than the Hindus. Dr. Keny wondered whether Sm. Sengupta tried to understand the Jain ideas within the present day knowledge of the subject. Dr. A. N. Lahiri remarked that the ancient people had no scientific basis for their ideas so that their process of thinking was different. Prof. Sircar opined that, in reality, Jain cosmography was an elaboration of the Brähmanical ideas, the details being clothed in excessive imagination. Dr. S. Bandyopadhyay referred to some writings on Jain cosmography, which Sm. Sengupta could have consulted with benefit.

Dr. Sm. R. Champakalakshmi then read her paper on 'Jainism in Tōṇḍaimañḍalam' in which she surveyed the available evidence, both epigraphical and literary, regarding the appearance of Jainism in Tōṇḍaimañḍalam. On the basis of a Digambara tradition, she attributed the advent of Jainism in South India to the migration of the Jain community under the Śrutakevalin Bhadrabāhu to the Mysore region at the beginning of the 3rd century B. C. Prof. Sircar remarked that epigraphical evidence points to the existence of Jainism side by side with Brähmanism and Buddhism in all parts of South India during the early centuries of the Christian era. Sri R. K. Bhattacharya referred to the Jain Brāhmanaš of Gujarat, and Prof. Sircar remarked that the Brāhmanas who worked particularly for the Jain community are called Jain Brāhmaṇa. Sri A. K. Chakravarti said that the traditional caste division was accepted by the Jains and the Buddhists.

The morning session ended for the lunch interval at 1 p.m.

Afternoon Session

After resumption of the session in the afternoon, Dr. Sm. K. Saha read her paper on 'Some Festivals and Fasts of the Jains', in which she discussed both Śvetāmbara and Digambara festivals. Prof. Sircar remarked that many of these fasts and festivals, well known to the students of Jainism, were observed
also by the Buddhists as well as the Brāhmanical Hindus. He referred to the division of the year into three seasons (consisting of four months each) which ended on the full-moon days of Phālguna, Āśāḍha and Kārttika and said that the month of Cāitra was regarded as holy by the Jains. Sri B. P. Mishra wanted to know whether Cāitra-pūrṇimā was considered sacred by the Hindus. Dr. A. K. Chatterjee remarked that the Cāitra festival is referred to by Āpastamba.

Sri R. K. Bhattacharya next read his note on 'A Summary of Jain Philosophy'. In it he discussed the theory of Cosmography and of Karman and its kinds, etc. Prof. Sirrār requested Sri Bhattacharya to explain Syādvāda; but the latter found it difficult to do so. Prof. Sirrār observed that the paper is not a clever exposition of the philosophical ideas of the Jains.

Dr. S. Bandyopadhyay next read his paper entitled 'Textile Industry described in an Early Jain Text' which was based on the Āṅgavīja. Prof. Sirrār remarked that kṣauma and dukūla are often regarded as synonymous, but sometimes as different so that the real difference between the two names is difficult to determine. Dr. A. K. Chatterjee thought that the paper deals only with some technical terms relating to the textile industry. Dr. K. K. Dasgupta wanted to know whether the technique of textile weaving is referred to in the Āṅgavīja. Dr. Bandyopadhyay answered in the negative. Dr. A. M. Shastri doubted whether Cīna and cīnapāṭṭa can be classed in the mūla category. Prof Sirrār also thought the expression mūlayonigata as ambiguous.

Next Dr. L. B. Keny read his note on 'The Primitive in Jainism'. He commented on Mrs. Stevenson's view on certain traditions regarding the Tirthaṅkaras and endeavoured to show that Indian legends are not totally detached from genuine historical traditions. The accounts of the Jains, he held, reflects their ignorance of time and space. The primitive concept of measurement with the help of bow and arrow definitely indicates that they were well known to the people during the time of the Tirthaṅkaras. The bow and arrow, still forming the weapons of a large number of Indian tribes,
can be associated with a definite civilization. Another interesting traditional description of the Jains relates to the emblems which came to be gradually associated with the 24 Tirthaṅkaras. There seems to be a probability that these indicate tribal marks or totems. Prof. Sircar, whose approach was somewhat different from Dr. Keny's, agreed with Mrs. Stevenson that the high stature attributed to the previous Jain Tirthaṅkaras should be taken with a grain of salt. He referred to Kalhana's Rājarataṅgini mentioning king Ranaḍitya who is said to have ruled for 300 years. He further pointed out that dhanus and hasta were both regarded as units of measurement in ancient Indian literature, and that dhanus was not peculiar to the Jains, but was common to the Indians in general. While discussing the symbols associated with the Tirthaṅkaras, Prof. Sircar further remarked that so many of them cannot possibly be regarded as totems connected with a single community. Dr. S. R. Das thought that there may be many totemic groups in a single tribe. Prof. Sircar, however, drew attention to the fact that, while literary evidence represents the Śaka tree as intimately associated with the Śākya tribe apparently as a totem, the Buddha is represented by various symbols such as the Bodhi tree, lotus and elephant, but not the Śaka tree. The Kadambas were likewise associated with the Kadamba tree which was, however, neither their crest nor the emblem on their dhvaja. Dr. K. K. Dasgupta remarked that all the Jain symbols cannot be associated with particular tribes.

Sm. K. Bajpeyi next read her paper entitled 'Jainism in the Early Inscriptions of Mathurā'. Prof. Sircar laid emphasis on the importance of the inscriptions from Mathurā for the reconstruction of the early history of Jainism. The epigraphic references to the Gana, Kula, Śākhā, etc., among the Jains, he said, are earlier than most of the early Jain works as they have come down to us.

Dr. S. P. Singh then read his paper on 'Jainism and Jain Relics in Bihar'. Prof. Sircar pointed out that there are some
omissions in Dr. Singh’s treatment of the subject. He particularly referred to the Kauleśvarī hill under the Hantergunje Police Station in the Hazaribag District, where several images of the Tirthaṅkaras are found. Sri A. K. Jha referred to some Jain temples and an image of Ādinātha of about the 4th century A. D. Dr. S. R. Das said that he visited many old Jain temples with the icons of Tirthaṅkaras in the interior of the Singhbhum–Manbhum region.

Sri R. K. Bhattacharya read a note on ‘the Earliest Form of Jainism’. He did not accept the view that Jainism originated with Pārśvanātha, who died 250 years before the death of Vardhamāna Mahāvīra, because the Jain religious texts show that 22 other prophets flourished before Pārśvanātha one after another, having a considerable period of gap between any two of them. He referred to Rṣabha and his ancestors mentioned in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa. Prof. Sircar regarded the earlier 22 Jain Tirthaṅkaras as mythical personages and did not attach any importance to the mediaeval Bhāgavata Purāṇa legend of Rṣabha represented there as an incarnation of Viṣṇu.

Prof. D. C. Sircar next read his note entitled ‘A Jain Tradition’ in which he discussed the Nemināhacariu reference to the coins of Cālukya Mālarāja. Prof. Sircar drew attention to the gold coins bearing the figure of goddess Lakṣmī and issued by Mālarāja as referred to in the colophon of Haribhadra’s Nemināhacariu composed in the year 1159 A. D. He said that this Mālarāja must be Mālarāja I of the Cālukya or Solaṅki dynasty of Gujarat who ruled in 961-96 A. D. because Mālarāja I of the same family reigned in 1176-78 A. D., i.e. sometime after the composition of the Nemināhacariu. Prof. Sircar regarded the said tradition recorded about a century and a half after the death of Mālarāja I as genuine, because in ancient and mediaeval India, coins, once in the market, remained in circulation for centuries. He considered it possible that Haribhadra saw some such coins. As regards the absence of any coin bearing the name of Mālarāja, Prof. Sircar suggested that they may have been issued either without the king’s name or in a small quantity. Dr. A. M. Shastri agreed
with Prof. Sircar. Dr. S. Bandyopadhyay observed that the reference to Mūlarāja’s coin in the Nemināhacariu has already been noticed by U. P. Shah and R. C. Agrawala.

The afternoon session of the Seminar ended at 5 p.m. with Prof. D. C. Sircar’s hearty thanks to all the participants. He appealed to the representatives of the various universities to forgive the organisers of the Seminars for the inconveniences they might have experienced during their short stay in Calcutta. Dr. L. B. Keny expressed the sense of gratitude of the assembled scholars to Prof. Sircar. Dr. A. M. Shastri, Dr. O. P. Verma and others paid their tribute to the Chairman and expressed their satisfaction at the success of the Seminars.
I

THE PRIMITIVE IN JAINISM

L. B. Keny, St. Xavier’s College, Bombay University

“The genius of the people of India”, says Mrs. Sinclair Stevenson, “does not lie in historical research; to them metaphysical thought is the chief end of man, and they are content to leave to western scholars the task of filling in the large gaps of unexplored country in their history.” “It is”, she continues, “the misfortune of Jainism that so much of its life story falls within these unexplored tracts of time, and though the Jainas have kept historical records of their own, it is very difficult to correlate these records with known facts in the world’s history.”¹ In this paper an attempt is made to challenge as well as to refute the statement of Mrs. Stevenson.

The Indian legends are not totally detached from Indian historical traditions. The Jain legends, therefore, contain latent historical facts though they are mixed up with traditions. The Jains respect their twenty-four Tirthaṅkaras, the first being Rṣabhadeva and the last Vardhamāna. The traditional account of the Jains reflects a miserable ignorance of time and space, though it may be that they indicate their hoary past and therefore refer to the primitive state of their civilization.

Referring to the duration of the interval between the different prophets, the Jains start with ‘50 lakhs of crores of of sāgara’ of time between Rṣabhadeva and Ajitanātha, the second prophet. The later Tirthaṅkaras, however, have considerably a shorter span of interval between them; e.g., ‘45 lakhs of years’ between the 19th and 20th Tirthaṅkaras. The change from sāgara to ‘years’ it very significant. The change reflects a primitive concept of time to a civilized one.

Like the primitive concept of the time factor, the Jain tradition reflects a primitive concept of measurement. It is a

¹ The Heart of Jainism, p. 7.
well-known fact that the traditional height of the first Tirthaṅkara is ‘500 bow-shots’ while that of the 22nd is ‘10 bow-shots’. It is quite interesting to note that the 12th Tirthaṅkara Vasupūjya is ‘70 arrow-shots’. The reference to bows and arrows is not the result of the Jain tradition being involved in a ‘metaphysical thought’, but it definitely indicates the concept of measurement with the help of the bows and arrows which were well known to the people during the time of these Tirthaṅkaras.* The bow and arrow have a definite history with a definite period of civilization. These weapons are primitive phases of the Jain tradition. The bow and arrow still form the weapons of a large number of Indian tribals.

Another interesting tradition of the Jains relate to the various emblems associated with the 24 Tirthaṅkaras. To put them in their chronological sequence they are the Bull, Elephant, Horse, Ape, Goose, Lotus flower, Svastika, Moon, Crocodile (Crab), Śrivatsa, Rhinoceros, Buffalo, Boar, Hawk, Thunderbolt, Antelope, Goat, Nandyāvartta, Waterjar, Tortoise, Aśoka tree (Lotus), Conch-shell, Snake and Lion. There seems to be a probability that these emblems indicate tribal marks or totems. The Jain Tirthaṅkaras were not associated with any particular marks in the beginning. Several of them, however, were endowed with the emblems at a later date. The emblems came gradually to be represented on their seats. Some of them, being animals, were converted into their vehicles. But the marks like the moon, water jar, lotus and conch-shell could not be conceived as vehicles since they were not animals. This suggests that the other animals too were originally not vehicles, but totems or tribal marks.* The 23rd Tirthaṅkara Pārśvanātha has the snake as his emblem. It is not an accident that the snake became a symbol in Jainism. Ancient Indian sculpture is replete with pictures of men and women having serpent-hood over their heads. They seem to represent people having the snake as their tribal mark.

* [Measurement by bow-shot seems to be imaginary; but one bow-length equal to four cubits was well known.—Ed.]
It is quite probable that Pārśvanātha belonged to the tribe of the Nāgas. The worship of the nāgas is popular with a number of Indian tribes like the Bhils and Mundas. Evidences of fights between the Aryans and the Nāgas and instances of their marriages with each other are well known in ancient Indian literature. It is also a well-known fact that the Aryans offered the Nāgas in sacrifices, burning them alive. It appears that these Nāgas were people whose tribal mark was the serpent. Marks like the crab, tortoise, conch-shell, etc., are associated with various tribes and they reflect the environment of the people from whose tribal groups the Tirthaṅkara hailed.

According to the Jain tradition Mahāvīra was enlightened while sitting under the Aśoka tree. The association of a tree with a Jain Tirthaṅkara reflects the sanctity of trees among the tribal people like the Oraon, Birhor, Munda and Gond.

The worship of funeral structures was an essential part of Jainism. This tradition is pre-Aryan and non-Aryan. To some extent, the worship of the dead and the later practice of the śrāddha offering for the salvation of the souls of ancestors indicate the tribal worship of the dead. Jainism seems to have adopted this primitive custom of the tribals.

The philosophy of Jainism gives a due place to the Yakṣas or spirits, both wicked and kind. These are characteristics of the cult of primitive tribes.

The above evidences indicate the impact of primitive ideas on Jainism.** There is a probability of a better historical assessment of the Jain traditions and legends with the help of anthropologists and archaeologists.

---

3 Cf. Guseva, Jainism, pp. 35-36.

*[Of the Tirthaṅkaras, Pārśva and Mahāvīra are the only two historical figures and, of these two, there are many traditions about the latter. None of them, however, connects the lion, Mahāvīra's emblem, with the clan to which he belonged.—Ed.]

4 Bihar through the Ages, p. 82; cf. Ghurye, The Aborigines so called and their Future.

**[None of the old religions is free from such influence.—Ed.]
The present paper makes no claim to precision, but makes an attempt to project some of the issues in the light of which the Jain traditional accounts need to be re-considered anthropologically and archaeologically. It seeks to suggest that a fruitful line of investigation lies in a combined research in anthropology, archaeology and history, and not each left to itself. The question remains how well this approach works.*

*See above, p. 8.—Ed.
II

JAIN COSMOGRAPHY

Sm. Sudha Sengupta, Delhi University

The question about the origin and shape of the universe we live in engaged the attention of men from time immemorial and numerous speculations were made by thinkers of all ages. This is evident in the religious literatures. Whereas the question of the origin and eternity or otherwise has been tried to be solved in the Brähmanical literature in various ways, the Buddha dismissed it outright as avyākata or inexplicable and unnecessary. The Jains also propounded some theories, criticising both the Brähmanical and Buddhist points of view, according to which the world is created and destroyed by reason of the combination and disintegration of a number of elements (jāda) and consciousness (cetana), which are eternal. As the component parts are eternal, so, in spite of the apparent changes, the world is also eternal, without primordium or annihilation. For them, therefore, there is no cosmogony.

But they have a well-defined cosmography almost on the lines of the Brähmanical Purāṇas, but at the same time considerably different from them in certain respects, particularly regarding the theory of the heavens and hells. Indian cosmography as a whole is quite interesting and Jain cosmography, which is a part thereof, may be said to be the more interesting. A few of its salient features may be mentioned here. In the first place, the cosmographical details are worked out in an elaborate plane; secondly, the details have close connection with the Jain metaphysical and ethical doctrines; thirdly, the entire range of Jain literature is so much permeated with these details that a clear understanding of them needs a constant reference to standard works on cosmography; and lastly, there is found in them, a good deal of knowledge of contemporary mathematics.1 For these reasons, the study of

1 Jambudīpapannattisamgraha (ed. H. L. Jain and A. N. Upadhye, Jain Samskrit Samrakshaka Samgha, Sholapur), Intr., p. 10 (henceforth mentioned as JPS).
cosmography seems not only popular, but also an important subject of study for the Jains.

Corresponding to the Jambudvipa-varanā of the Brāhmaṇical texts there are a number of texts in Jainism in connection with Jambudvipa, like the sixth Upāṅga Jambudipapannātī and post-canonical works like Umapātī’s Jambudipasamāsa, Haribhadra’s Jambudivasanāṅghāyaṁ, and Padmanandin’s Jambudīvapannattisaṅghāha (JPS). 2

The shape of the world in the Jain texts is compared to ‘a woman with her arms akimbo’ 3 or, in older accounts, to the figure of a man. It is also ‘compared with a three-dimensional figure 8’, the upper and lower loops 4 representing the upper and the lower world, while the middle portion, i.e., the junction of the two loops, which may be the waist of ‘the man—represents the world we live in and is called Jambudvipa. This Jambudvipa, which is round like the sun and of immense dimension, is at the centre of the horizontal disc and separated from each other by oceans. At the centre of Jambudvipa and therefore of the world, stands the great Mount Meru or Mandara, 5 which is fabulously high. The Jambudvipa has thirteen divisions, of which there are seven kṣetras, viz. Bharata, Haimavata, Harivarṣa, Videha or Mahāvīdeha, Ramyaka, Hairanyavat and Airāvata; and six kulaparvatas, viz. Himavat or Culahimavat, Mahāhīmavat, Niṣadha, Nila, Rūpya or Rukmin and Śikharin. Of these, Himavat and Śikharin are made of gold and the others of different precious stones. The great river Gaṅgā flows from the Padmahīrd on the Himavat mountain and, flowing for 500 yojanas, enters into a big lake at the foot of the same mountain; in its course, it washes many an image of the Jina. 6

Uttarakuru is regarded as a land of the blessed in Brāhmaṇical literature. In the Jain cosmography, Uttarkuru

---

2 Loc. cit.
4 Loc. cit.
5 For the dimension and description of the Meru-parvata, cf. JPS, Ch. IV, 21-40.
6 JPS, p. 33.
is placed between the Gandhamādana and Mālyavat mountains. It is to the east of the Gandhamādana and the west of the Mālyavat and to the north of the Meru and the south of the Nila. The texts give a detailed description of the lakes, rivers, mountains and mansions wherein deities live. Another place called Devakuru is placed to the south of the Mandara.

The Jain cosmographical accounts mention the Bharata and Airāvata regions of Jambudvīpa and also two continents besides Jambudvīpa, which are separated from it by impassable seas, are exactly like Jambudvīpa in all respects and are called Dhātakikhaṇḍa and Puṣkarārdha or Puṣkaradvīpa. Both of them have the eastern and western Bharata and Airāvata kṣetras. Thus it makes a total of ten regions: Jambudvīpa having two and Dhātakikhaṇḍa and Puṣkarārdha four each. To each of these regions, is allotted twenty-four past, present and future Tīrthaṅkaras. Bharatavarṣa, i.e. India, is said to be a small portion in the southern side of Jambudvīpa.

The upper and lower worlds, i.e., the heaven and hell, are described in Jain cosmographical works in detail. They start from the bottom, i.e., the hell and proceed upwards to heaven, via the earth which stands at the centre. There are seven lower regions, one below the other, which are named—from top to bottom—Ratnaprabhā, Śarkarāprabhā, Vālukāprabhā, Paṁkaprabhā, Dhūmaprabhā, Tamaḥprabhā and Mahātamaḥprabhā, each of which contains numerous hells. Where people committing different grades of sin are sent to undergo punishment of varying degrees. The lowermost naturally are the worst of all. The periods of stay in these hells also are fixed according to the gravity of the sins committed. These regions are separated from each other by thick layers of vacuum with no inhabitants. Only in the layer between the uppermost nether region and the earth, there lives a class of gods, known

7 Ibid., pp. 100ff.
8 Ibid., p. 108.
9 For a comparative study, refer to the cosmographical sections of the Purāṇas.
as Bhavanavāsin, who are the Nāgas, Asuras, Suparnas, etc.\textsuperscript{10}

The series of heavens start above Mount Meru in a number of stages. First, there are three tiers or Vīmānas which are the habitats of Vaimānika gods. The first of them is a set of 12 Kalpas, preceded by 9 Graiveyakas, and above them are the 5 Anuttaras. [The name Graiveyaka comes from grīvā or neck of the cosmic Puruṣa.] The souls attaining the Anuttara heaven will have no more than two rebirths before complete emancipation. The topmost region of the Anuttara heaven is called Sarvarthasiddha abode which is the top of the Universe, in the shape of an umbrella of huge dimension, named Iṣatprāgbhāra, where emancipated souls have their final rest.\textsuperscript{11}

The planetary world, i.e., the Sun, Moon and the constellations, revolve round Mount Meru, each having a presiding deity. A peculiar notion of the Jains is that the whole planetary system has a duplicate, each set covering only half of the journey. While one works, the other rests, and when the latter takes over, the former takes rest, so that we can see only one of them whereas in reality they are two.

As in the Brāhmaṇical theories, according to Jain mythology also, the wheel of time moves continuously with the rim going up and down alternately. The period designating the downward movement is called Avasarpini and the upward one is known as Utsarpini. These two main periods are again subdivided into six periods according to the degree of happiness or misery enjoyed or suffered by the people born in them. The physical stature and life-span of men vary according to the influence of these ages. The height and life-span gradually decrease in the Avasarpini era while they increase gradually in the Utsarpini.\textsuperscript{12}

\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{10} Bühler, \textit{Indian Sect of the Jains} (reprint, 1963), p. 48; \textit{JPS}, pp. 204ff.
\item \textsuperscript{11} \textit{JPS}, Ch. xi.
\item \textsuperscript{12} \textit{ERE}, Vol. IV, pp. 160-61; \textit{SBE}, Vol. XLY, Ch. XXXVI—Uttarādhyaṇa Sutra.
\end{itemize}
Thus, the Jain account of Jambudvīpa agrees more or less with the Epic and Purānic accounts. For want of space, it is not possible to discuss them in detail.¹³ Though the Jains claim to be very rational, their cosmography is not less imaginary than that of the Brāhmanical thinkers.

III
THE CONCEPTION OF TIRTHAŃKARAS IN
JAIN MYTHOLOGY
A. N. Lahiri, Calcutta University

There is some outward similarity between the Tirthaṅkara
myth of the Jains and the Avatāravāda of the Hindus. The
Tirthaṅkaras, numbering twenty-four, play the same role of
‘Saviour of the Faith’ as their ten avatāra counterparts. But
there is a fundamental difference between the two. According
to the Avatāravāda, the same divine agent appears again in
various forms or incarnations to save the religion from corrup-
tion and decay; but, according to the Tirthaṅkara myth,
different human agents make their successive appearances
avowedly for the same purpose. This is due to a basic
difference in the thinking process of the myth-makers of
the two religions.

Jainism grew in North-Eastern India out of a strong reac-
tion against the caste-oriented and ritualistic Brāhmaṇical
religion. People of the region, who were Non-Aryan in origin
but were ultimately taken into the Aryan fold, evidently could
not adjust their basically different religious ideas with the
ritualistic practices of the Brāhmaṇical Hindus and their con-
ception of the inviolability of the Vedas and the eternal
existence of divinities. This reaction was all the more pro-
nounced amongst the neo-Kṣatriya who could not stand the
supremacy of the Brāhmaṇas. It happened in the sixth
and fifth centuries B. C., and, as a result, quite a few
heterodox religions like Jainism and Buddhism came into being
under the leadership of various religious thinkers, all of
whom, it is needless to say, were non-Brāhmaṇas.*

In the Brāhmaṇical religion, gods, eternal and all-power-
ful, play an important role, since they have amongst them the

*Some of them like Pūraṇa Kaśyapa were Brāhmaṇas according to
scholars.—Ed.]
'creator' and the 'regulator' of the universe. But the reaction that formulated the ideas which went to the making of the Jain religion, dispensed with the notion of the eternal existence of any being, divine or human. Of course, it had ultimately to admit the firmly-rooted Brāhmaṇical divinities in its mythology; but they were relegated to inferior positions and were considered to be mortals like other living beings.

Mahāvira, a neo-Kṣatriya prince of the Jñātṣka clan of Vaisālī, who renounced worldly comforts and ultimately attained sainthood, gave concrete shape to what is known as Jainism. As it appears, he was not, however, the virtual founder of the religion, for he evidently incorporated in its creed some important ideas propounded by an earlier teacher, Pārśva by name.

It was after the death of Mahāvira that his followers codified what Mahāvira—or for that matter, both Pārśva and Mahāvira—preached. To their followers, however, both the teachers were the greatest personalities enjoying supernatural powers. They would have defied them straightway, as is the general tendency amongst the followers of great religious teachers in India; but the fact that the teachers did not believe in the supremacy of gods dissuaded them from doing so. Nevertheless, they placed them at the highest level of sainthood and applied to them the epithet tīrthakara or tīrthāṅkara, meaning 'one, who makes a tīrtha, or ford' for crossing the river of worldly sorrows. The Tīrthāṅkaras were thus not only the preachers of the faith, but also the redeemers of its followers.

The Jains, however, were not at all in favour of calling Pārśva and Mahāvira the founders of their faith, which, for the sake of respectability, had to be declared as eternal. But the religion which did not have any beginning or end is bound to be corrupted in course of time and would need the appearance of a number of preachers and redeemers at intervals. Only two teachers, Pārśva and Mahāvira, who were but mortals, could not perform the task. Myth-makers rose to the occasion and conceived the existence of as many as twenty-
four Tirthaṅkaras who appeared one after the other—and of course at intervals—to save the religion from corruption and decay. But this scheme holds good only for the present age or Avasarpinī. What about the past and the future ages? For them also was allotted a band of twenty-four Tirthaṅkaras each. Then, since, according to the Jain cosmology, the universe has ten worlds (or a sort of continents) like Jambudvīpa-Bharata where we live, each world was allotted, for its past, present and future eras, three bands of twenty-four Tirthaṅkaras, which make the total number of Tirthaṅkaras as many as 720 (24×3×10=720). We are provided with the names of all the seven hundred and twenty Tirthaṅkaras; but minute details are given only for the twenty-four belonging to the present age of Jambudvīpa-Bharata alone.

The myth-makers then tried to solve the problem of the vastness of the present era by allotting an ever-increasing life-span to each preceding Tirthaṅkara as well as by gradually extending the time-gap between any particular Tirthaṅkara and his preceding counterpart. Thus, while the twenty-fourth Tirthaṅkara Mahāvira lived for 72 years, Pārśva who just preceded him, had a life-span of 100 years; and his two predecessors, Ariṣṭanemi and Naminātha, lived for 1000 and 10,000 years respectively. In this way, the first Tirthaṅkara, viz. Rṣabha, was thought of as having a fantastic life-span of 8,400,000 pūrva or great years. Again, while the time-gap between Mahāvira and Pārśva was of 250 years, that between Pārśva and Ariṣṭanemi was considerably increased; and, again, the interval between the latter and his predecessor Naminātha was still further extended; and in this way, the ultimate interval between the second and first Tirthaṅkaras rose to many millions of years.

Besides having ever-increasing life-spans, each earlier Tirthaṅkara was of ever-increasing height. Thus, while the twenty-fourth Tirthaṅkara had a moderate height of seven cubits,* his two predecessors Pārśva and Ariṣṭanemi were res-

* [This is abnormal.—Ed.]
pectively nine cubits and ten poles high. And finally the first Tirthaṅkara Rṣabha had a fantastic height of 500 poles or nearly two miles.

The Jain myth-makers have handed down to us individual accounts of all the twenty-four Tirthaṅkaras from Rṣabha to Mahāvīra. Besides investing each of them with ‘thirty-six superhuman attributes of most extraordinary character’, they have furnished us with other necessary particulars in a highly schematised and set pattern, viz. (1) Viṃāna (heaven from which he descended for incarnation), (2) place of birth as well as consecration (dikṣā), (3) names of father and mother, (4) complexion, (5) cognizance (ciśna or tāṇchana); (6) height, (7) age, (8) dikṣā-vokeṣa, (9) attendant spirits (Yakṣa and Yakṣini), (10) first gaṇadhara (male disciple) and first āryā (female disciple).

We are also provided with a few other items of information, such as the Tirthaṅkara’s family, places of his attainment of enlightenment (kevala-jñāna) and deliverance in bliss (mokṣa) or death as well as the posture in which he obtained mokṣa. This additional information is highly interesting; for, even though painfully stereotyped, some diversions, apparently arbitrary, have been introduced lest people should think that the information is too schematised to be true. All the Tirthaṅkaras were born in the most renowned Kṣatriya royal families—twenty-two in the Ikṣvāku-kula and two, viz. Munisuvrata and Neminātha, in the Hari-vaiṣṇava. All received dikṣā in the respective places of their birth. All obtained jñāna also at the respective places of their birth, except Rṣabha, Neminātha and Mahāvīra. Twenty of them had their mokṣa on Śameta-sikhara, except Rṣabha, Vāsupūjya, Neminātha and Mahāvīra. Kāyotsarga is the posture in which as many as twenty-one Tirthaṅkaras obtained mokṣa, while Rṣabha, Neminātha and Mahāvīra died in Padmāsana.

It is evident that the original scheme of the Tirthaṅkara myth was embellished with painfully boring and schematised details only at a much later date, when Jainism spread to Western India. Many of the anecdotes that find their place
in the mythology of the Jains are evidently adopted from the mainstream of India's traditional ideas.

The story that Mahāvīra was originally conceived by a Brāhmaṇa woman, but that the embryo was transferred by a god to the womb of a Kṣatriya lady is interesting in this respect. That a miracle should happen in connection with the birth of the most renowned and revered Tirthaṅkara was recognized; so the miraculous transfer of the embryo was conceived apparently on the analogy of the similar miracle associated with the birth of the Hindu avatāra Kṛṣṇa. This conception brings out another significant fact. It shows the bias of the Jains against the Brāhmaṇa and their preference for the Kṣatriya. A Brāhmaṇa mother was not worthy enough to give birth to a Tirthaṅkara. Then, again, the mother of the Tirthaṅkara was made to dream the stereotyped number of fourteen dreams before his birth. This dream conception has its parallel too in the Buddhist mythology.

But the most important aspect of the Tirthaṅkara myth is the attribution of supernatural powers to the Tirthaṅkara. Though human and mortal, they are not like ordinary men; they have extraordinary statures and generally have fantastically long life-spans. They have beside them non-human Yakṣas and Yakṣinīs like the Hindu deities and great Buddhist personalities.* Though scrupulously differentiated from the gods of the Hindu pantheon, Jain Tirthaṅkaras were ultimately given attributes of the Hindu gods and are now worshipped like them.

---Ed.

*The Jain conceptions about such attendants is more uniform and regular than in the case of Hindu deities and Buddhist divinities.—Ed.]
IV

SOME FESTIVALS AND FASTS OF THE JAINS

Smt. Kshanika Saha, Centre of Advanced Study in AIHC, Calcutta University

The Jains have been traditionally divided into four groups, viz. Śādhu, Śādhvi, Śrāvaka and Śrāvaki. The same vratas or religious vows are prescribed for the ascetics and the laity with the only difference that the ascetics have to observe them more scrupulously while the laity is allowed to follow them in a less severe manner. Like other communities of India, the Jains have a number of festivals during the year. The festivals and fasts are observed mainly as religious ceremonies. According to the Jains, the religious ceremonies are to be performed at the proper time and place which are determined with the help of astronomers.¹

Paryusana. Among holy seasons, none is regarded by the Jains as more sacred than the closing days of their religious year, when the ascetics and laity observe the solemn fast of Pajjusanā. Mahāvīra, that great religious teacher, decreed that Pajjusanā should begin when a month and twenty nights of the rainy season had elapsed, his reason apparently being that the lay people would by that time have prepared their houses to brave the elements; and business, too, being less brisk, they would be at liberty to attend to their religious duties. It is a convenient season also for the ascetics, who during the rains give up for a time their peregrinations, lest they should injure any of the abundant life, animal or vegetable, then springing into being.² The Buddhist call it Vassā-vāsa. During the fast of Pajjusanā, householders are urged to live a monk's life for at least twenty-four hours and to observe Posaḍha. Pajjusanā literally means 'serving with a whole-hearted devotion'.

² SBE, Vol. XXX, 1884, 296 ff.
According to the Śvetāmbaras, Pajjusāṇa begins with the twelfth of the dark half of Śrāvāṇa and ends with the fifth of the bright half of Bhāḍrapada (August-September). It lasts for eight days. On the third day of the Pajjusāṇa, the Śvetāmbaras organise a procession in honour of the Kalpasūtra, a religious text which they hold in great reverence. This Sūtra principally deals with three subjects, i.e. lives of Tīrthaṅkaras, list of sages, and rules and regulations to be followed by the Jain monks. According to the Digambaras, Pajjusāṇa lasts every year for ten days from the fifth to the 14th day of the bright half of the month of Bhāḍrapada. On these days, early in the morning, all people assemble in the temple and perform worship in a large scale. After the worship, on every day, one chapter out of the ten chapters of the Tattvārthasūtra is read and explained to the people. During this festival, the annual or great Pratikarman or confession called Samvatsara-Pratikarman is performed, in order to remove all ill-feelings against all living beings and to ask pardon from all living beings for any act done knowingly or unknowingly in the course of their mutual exchange during the year. At the close of the meeting everyone present asks the forgiveness of his neighbours for any offence he may even unwittingly have given. This means determination to spend the new year in love and charity with their neighbours.

Siddhacakra-pūjā. This is performed only by the Śvetāmbara Jains twice in a year in Caitra and Āśvina, and lasts for eight or nine days, beginning on the 7th and ending on the full-moon day. In every Śvetāmbara temple, there is a saint-wheel, or Siddhacakra, which is a little eight-sided plate made either of brass or silver with five tiny figures representing the Five Great ones (Śādhu, Upādhyāya, Ācārya, Arhat and Siddha). Between the figures are written the names of the three jewels (right knowledge, right faith and right conduct) and also the word tapa, austerity, which might almost be called the keyword of the whole Jain system. On the last day 'Navapada'—

3 Vilas Adinath Sanghve, Jain Community, p. 248.
pūjā is performed before the Siddhacakra with singing and offerings and the pouring of pots of ‘Pakhal’ consisting of water, milk, saffron and clarified butter.⁴

Jñāna-pañcamī. Once in a year a fast called Jñāna-pañcamī is observed. On this day all Jain sacred books are not only worshipped, but also dusted, freed from insects and rearranged.

Mahāvīra-jayanti. The birthday anniversary of Lord Mahāvīra falls on the thirteenth day of the bright half of Caitra, and this is celebrated with great pomp and enthusiasm throughout India by all Jains.

Viraśāsana-jayanti. This is celebrated mainly by the Digambara Jains every year on the first day of the dark half of Śrāvana. The day is important because on this very day Lord Mahāvīra, after gaining omniscience, delivered his first religious discourse on the Vipula mountain at Rājagrha.⁵

Days of Abstinence. Fasting is considered so important by the Jains that many Śvetāmbara Jains observe twelve days in every month as days of abstinence. The Digambaras, however, observe fast on ten days in every month of the year, on the second, fifth, eighth, eleventh and fourteenth days of both the bright and dark halves of the month.⁶ Less devout Jains among the Śvetāmbaras observe only five days of abstinence. Moreover, four full-moon days during the year are observed as special fasts days by the Śvetāmbara Jains. These full-moon days are those of the months of Kārttika, Phālguna, Caitra and Āśāḍha. The Kārttika and Caitra full-moon days are considered more important and, on these two days, people try to go on pilgrimage to any sacred place, especially to the hills of Śatruṅjaya in Kathiawar.⁷

Oli or Ambela. This is the fast of Jain women. It occurs eight days before the Caitra-pūrṇimā, and all women who long

---

for a happy wedded life abstain specially from nice food for twenty-four hours.  

_Bathing of Gomateśvara._ Another rare act of Jain worship is the bathing of colossal figures such as that of Gomateśvara at Śravaṇa-Belgola, which takes place every twenty-five years. This is the festival of the Digambara Jains. The idol of Gomateśvara was made about 983 A.D.  

_Mauna Ekādaśī._ The Śvetāmbaras once a year keep solemn fast called Mauna Ekādaśī or Maunagārāsā on the eleventh day of some month preferably the 11th of the bright half of Mārgaśirṣa (November-December). This day is generally spent in fasting with a vow of silence for the whole day, and the worshipper meditates on each of the five stages, viz. Sādhu, Upādhyāya, Ācārya, Tīrthaṅkara and Siddha.  

_Aṇjanaśalākā._ Besides the regularly recurring holy days of the year, there are special occasions of rejoicing such as Aṇjanaśalākā (the consecration of a new idol) which is celebrated with great pomp.  

_Divāli or Dipāvali._ Apart from the festivals and fasts described above which are observed only by the Jains, there are other festivals which are observed by Jains along with the Hindus. Among such festivals, the Divāli is the most important as well as sacred. It has, however, been given a Jain sanction by calling it the day on which Mahāvīra passed to Nirvāṇa; the celestial and other beings who were present at that time worshipped him and instituted an illumination saying, "Since the light of intelligence is gone, let us make an illumination of material matter." From that time, the followers of Mahāvīra celebrate every year the festival of lamps in honour of his achieving liberation. The Jain era known as Vīra-nirvāṇa Śrāvetra also begins from this date. On this day,

---

8 Stevenson, _The Heart of Jainism_, p. 263.  
9 B. L. Rice, _Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions_, p. 47.  
10 Nahar and Ghosh, _op. cit._, p. 676.  
11 Stevenson, _The Heart of Jainism_, p. 263.  
12 _ibid._, pp. 260-61.  
13 _SBE_, Vol. XXII, p. 266.
early in the morning, the Jains visit the temple and worship the idol of Mahāvira known as Nirvāṇa Lāḍū. On the first day, the Śvetāmbara women polish their jewellery and ornaments in honour of Lakṣmī; on the second day they propitiate evil spirits by placing sweetmeats at crossroads, and on the third day (Amāsa) all Jains worship their account book (Śūradā-pūjā).

Rakṣābandhana. This is another great festival which is observed by the Jains, especially by the Digambaras. It teaches the spirit of affection towards co-religionists. The Jains observe it on the full-moon day of Śrāvaka because on this day their ascetic Viṣṇukumāra saved, through his own spiritual powers, the lives of seven hundred Jain monks from death from the human-sacrifice organised by Bali, the king of Hastinapura.

Aksaya-tritiya. It is observed in connection with the first Tīrthaṅkara Ādinātha.

Besides the above, the Jains follow a number of Hindu festivals such as Daśera, Makara-saṅkrānti and Śitalāsātama (the festival of the goddess of Small Pox). At Daśera, the Jains eat especially dainty food, and on the Makara-saṅkrānti they fulfill the duty of charity by giving food to cows and clothing to the poor.

14 Ibid., p. 267.
15 Sanghve, Jain Community, p. 252.
A SUMMARY OF JAIN PHILOSOPHY

R. K. Bhattacharya, Centre of Advanced Study in AIHC, Calcutta University

Indian Philosophy may primarily be divided into two different sections, i.e., Āstika and Nāstika (i.e., Theistic and Atheistic), the former having its faith in the existence of God and latter not having it. Some of the commentators on Pāṇini’s Grammar explain the term Āstika as denoting those who have their faith in Paraloka or the life after death. The Cārvāka philosophy having its faith neither in God nor in the life after death was admitted by all as Nāstika. On the other hand, the philosophies of the Buddhists and the Jains having their firm faith in the theory of rebirth (i.e., life after death) have been denounced by many of the Indian thinkers as Nāstika simply for their disbelief in the existence of God, and apparently also for their non-belief in the fruitfulness of the Vedic rituals. As the philosophy of the Buddhists and the Jains believe in rebirth and the fruitfulness of one’s action, which fall in line with the thought of the Hindu philosophers, and are contrary to the ideas of the Cārvākas, a new name Pākhanda or Pāṣanda was given to them for distinguishing them from Cārvāka philosophy. Virchand R. Gandhi, who represented Jainism in the Parliament of Religions held at Chicago in 1893 and also preached the philosophy of the Jains throughout the world, discussed the essence of Jain philosophy in his celebrated lectures published by the Agamodaya Samiti of Bombay.¹

The term Jain means ‘a follower of the Jina’ who ‘conquered the lower nature, i.e. passion, hatred and the like, and brought into prominence the highest’.² The Jains look into the things in two different ways, of which one is called Dravy-

¹ V. R. Gandhi, The Jain Philosophy, edited and published by Sri Agamodaya Samiti, Bombay (2nd ed., 1924)
² Ibid., p. 15.
arthishikanaya and the other Paryāarthikanaya. According to the former the universe is without beginning and end, whereas the latter holds creation and destruction to take place at every moment. The canons of the Jains also may be divided into two parts, viz. Śrutadharma (philosophy) and Carita-dharma (ethics). Śrutadharma deals with the nature of nine principles consisting of six kinds of living beings and four states of existence. The first of the nine principles is soul, the second non-soul, and so on. Jain philosophers divide the substance into six kinds, namely, (i) sentiment or consciousness, (ii) matter, (iii) dharmāstikāya (fulcrum of motion), (iv) adharmāstikāya (fulcrum of stability or rest), (v) space, and (vi) time. The living beings are generally divided into six classes, viz. earthbody beings, waterbody beings, firebody beings, windbody beings, vegetables, and animals. Amongst these six classes, one to five are said to have only a single organ of sense (that of touch). The animals are again divided into four classes, viz. (i) those having no organs of sense (touch and taste), such as tapeworms leeches, etc.; (ii) those having three organs of sense (touch, taste, and smell), such as ants, lice, etc.; (iii) those having four organs of sense (the aforesaid three and sight), such as bees, scorpions, etc., and (iv) those having five organs of sense (the above four and hearing).

Jain philosophy divides karman or action into eight different kinds, viz. (i) that which is an impediment to the knowledge of truth, (ii) that which is an impediment to the right insight of various sorts, (iii) that which brings in pleasure and pain, (iv) that which produces bewilderment, and the like. The remaining four classes are so minutely divided and subdivided that 'a student of Jain Karma philosophy can trace any effect to a particular karman'. According to the Jain faith, the highest happiness is to be obtained through knowledge and religious observances. Jain philosophy never permits

3 Ibid., p. 1.
4 Loc. cit.
5 Ibid., p. 3.
6 Ibid., p. 7.
to kill or hurt any living being. It instructs the ascetics to observe ‘the five Mahāvrutras or great commandments’, viz. (i) to protect all lives, (ii) not to lie, (iii) not to take anything which is not offered, (iv) to abstain from sexual intercourse, and (v) to renounce all interest in worldly things, especially to call nothing as one’s own.  

Jain philosophy teaches that the universe, when considered as ‘the totality of realities’, is infinite in space and eternal in time, and that when ‘considered from the standpoint of the manifestations of the different realities’, it is finite in space and non-eternal in time. According to it, there are five gateways of knowledge, each of which is subject to the laws of evolution and karman. These were described by Virchand R. Gandhi in the Parliament of Religions in the following way: In the lowest form of life, there is only one sense, that of touch. In the higher forms of life, there are two, three, four and (as in animals, birds, fish and men) five senses. These, according to the Jains, can unfold only a limited form of knowledge. The second source is study and reading. The third is Avadhūti or the psychic faculty through which finer and more subtle things are known. The fourth is mind-knowing, through which one knows the mental activities of others. The fifth is the absolute knowledge which only can remove all the limitations of body and brain.

The Jains admit that the soul is eternal having neither birth nor death, and that, when this takes its abode is a new body, the process is called rebirth. They also admit the existence of both the spirit and the matter, and as such, do not hesitate to call themselves dualists. In this connection, V. R. Gandhi announced before the Parliament of Religions: ‘We are dualists. We say, there is spirit and matter, while the positivists and monists in this country say, there is but

7 Ibid., pp. 7-8.
8 Ibid., p. 20.
9 Ibid., pp. 21-22.
one substance. We say, "No; spirit can never be matter. Matter is known by the senses, spirit only by spirit......Spirit is that whose attribute or differentia is consciousness."\(^9\)

The difference between the soul and the non-soul, according to the Jains, is that the soul is endowed with the power to know, and the non-soul is the reverse of it. The dualism of the Jains was explained before the Religious Parliament in the following words: "The totality of the universe taken as a whole is eternal; but there are so many parts of that collection and so many entities in it, all of which have their different states which occur at different times and each part does not retain the same state at all times. There is change; there is destruction of any particular form and a new form comes into existence; and therefore, if we look upon the universe from this standpoint, it is non-eternal.\(^{10}\) The idea that the universe originated from nothing, which the Buddhists hold so strongly, has no place in Jain philosophy.\(^{11}\) The Jains do not admit the existence of God; but their views are almost similar to the Sākhya and Vedānta systems of Hindu philosophy; they admit that there exists a Supreme Power or Energy to which they pray for being one or equal with Him. A Jain verse says: "I bow down to that spiritual power or energy which is the cause of leading us to the path of salvation, which is supreme and omniscient. I bow down to that power; because I wish to be one with him."\(^{12}\)

Jain philosophy classifies the whole cosmos under two heads, viz. Jiva and Ajiva, of which the former stands for the sentient or conscious, and the latter for insentient or unconscious. The Jiva travels from body to body, which themselves are Ajiva. When this unnecessary contact of Jiva with Ajiva is

---

9 Ibid., p. 25.
10 Ibid., p. 43.
11 Ibid., p. 47.
12 Ibid., p. 55.
removed, the former shines forth in its bliss, assuming its real state of final emancipation. In the Jain view, the inanimate world consists of matter, space, and two kinds of ether known as Dharmāstikāya and Adharmāstikāya. The animate world consists of innumerable kinds of living beings, each being a centre of complex forces. Time may be figuratively called a substance, though really meaning a generalised mode of thought in respect of the activities of beings and things.

Unlike the Hindus, the Jains hold that the highest thing is a person, and not any characterless, qualityless being like the Brahman of the Vedānta or the like.

As regards the process of acquiring knowledge, Jain philosophy describes it in the following way: "First, there is the indefinite cognition as an isolated object or idea. It is the state of the mind prior to analysis. It is that condition of things to which analysis is to be applied. This is what is really meant by unity or identity of the universe with the real which many philosophers proclaim. It makes no difference whether this unity or identity finds its home in a sensuous object or a subjective idea, the process being the same. Next comes analysis—the dissolving, separating, or differentiating of the parts, elements, properties, or aspects. Last comes the synthesis, which is putting together the primitive indefinite cognition—synthesis—with the subsequent analysis, so that the primitive cognition shall not be a complete annihilation, or disappearance by the condensation of all difference, and so that, on the other hand, the analysis shall not be an absolute diffusiveness, isolation or abstraction and destruction of all unity, which is not the primitive unity, but the relational unity of a variety of aspects. The analytical method is known in the Jain literature as Nayavāda (consideration of aspects). The synthetical method is called Svādvāda (doctrine of the inexpugnability of the inextricably combined properties and relations) or Anekāntavāda (doctrine of non-isolation)."
The Jains hold that water itself is an assemblage of minute animate creatures, and that air, fire, and even lightning have life in them. They admit that the physical substance of clay, water, stone, etc., is a multitude of bodies of living beings, but that, when dried up, they become pure matter, having no life in them. Similarly, according to the Jains, vegetables, trees, fruits, etc., have life in them; but when dried or cooked, this life does not exist any longer.  

16 Ibid., p. 241.
VI

JAINISM IN EARLY INSCRIPTIONS OF MATHURĀ

Sm. Kalyani Baipeyi, Centre of Advanced Study in AIHC, Calcutta University.

In Mathurā, we come across a large number of small dedicatory inscriptions incised on the images of Jinas as well as on votive tablets, arches, etc. Some of the epigraphs are dated. Most of these come from the Kaṅkālī Tiḷā (mound) and show that, in the first and second centuries of the Christian era, Jainism was in a flourishing condition in that region. However, the earliest Jain inscription1 recording the erection of an ornamental arch of the temple by a layman named Uttaradāsaka, the disciple of the ascetic Māgharaksīta, has been assigned to 150 B.C.2 Another inscription3 of the Kuṣāṇa period dated in the year 49 of the Kaniska (Śaka) era records the establishment of an image of the Arhat Nandyāvarta4 at the Vodva stūpa, built by the gods (Vodve ṭhupa deva-nirmite). The stūpa seems to have been so old that it was believed by the people to have been built by the gods. The Tirthakalpa or Rājaprasāda of Jinaprabha, a fourteenth-century work based on ancient materials, narrates the construction and repair of the ‘stūpa, built by the gods’. According to this work,5 the stūpa, originally made of gold and embellished with precious

1 Lüders’ List, No. 93.
3 Lüders’ List, No. 47.
4 Arhat Nandyāvarta is, as translated by Führer (Progress Report of the Lucknow Museum, 1891, p. 16), ‘tho Arhat whose mark is the Nandyāvarta symbol’, that is to say, Aranātha, the 18th Tirthankara who had the said symbol of cogniscence. The reading Nandyāvarta is accepted by scholars like Bühler (Ep. Ind., Vol. II, p. 204), Smith (The Jain Stūpa and Other Antiquities of Mathurā, 1969, p. 12) and Lüders (List, No. 47). K. D. Bajpai (JUPES, Vols. XXIV-XXV, p. 220), reads the word as Manisvāvarta referring to the 20th Jina. [Deva-nirmite = built by the king?—Ed.]
5 Smith, op. cit., p. 15.
stones, was erected by the goddess Kuberā in honour of Supārśvanātha, the 7th Jina. Later on, at the time of Pārśvanātha, the 23rd Jina, the golden stūpa was surrounded by enclosure made of bricks, and a stone temple was built outside. Smith holds that the stūpa is probably ‘the oldest known building in India’. In this connection, mention may be made of the Vyavahāra-bhāṣya referring to a jewelled stūpa at Mathurā.

The inscriptions of Mathurā indicate the cult of the Jain Tirthaṅkaras. Images of Rśabha, the first of the Tirthaṅkaras, are mentioned in Kuśāṇa and Gupta records and testifies to the popularity of his worship in the age in question. Besides, four other Kuśāṇa inscriptions speak of the installation of the statues of the four Tirthaṅkaras, viz. Sambhavanātha (3rd), Śāntinātha (16th), Ariśpanemi (22nd) and Pārśvanātha (23rd). Of course Mahāvīra, the last Jina, was much more popular, and inscriptions referring to the dedication of his image are numerous not only in the Kuśāṇa period when Jainism was in a prosperous condition at Mathurā, but in the preceding age also. Mahāvīra, more popularly called Vardha māna, was the name given to him at birth.

The first twenty-two Tirthaṅkaras are considered to be mythical figures, and only the last two, viz. Pārśvanātha and

6 U. P. Shah (Studies in Jain Art, 1969, p. 12 and note) is of the opinion that, since from the beginning of excavations at the Kaṅkālī Tīlā, not a single specimen exposed the name of Supārśvanātha as a popular Jina there, and there is reference to Pārśvanātha in an inscription (Lüders’ List, No. 110) at Mathurā, the stūpa was originally dedicated not to Supārśvanātha, but probably to Pārśvanātha.

7 Smith, loc. cit.

8 V. 27ff.

9 Lüders’ List, Nos. 56, 69a, 117, 121; Lüders, Math. Ins., ed. K. L. Janetz, 1961, p. 35. In a Kuśāṇa record (ibid., p. 52), Lüders reads the name Mahārśabha which he takes to be a mistake for Maharśabha, i.e. Rśabha (loc. cit.).


Mahāvira, are regarded as historical personages. Mahāvira is supposed to be the prophet and reformer, but not the originator of the creed. It is believed that Pārśvanātha preached the four vows, viz. ahimsā (non-injury), satya (truth), āsteya (abstinence from stealing) and aparigraha (non-attachment to worldly things). To the four, Mahāvira added a fifth, i.e. brahmācarya (chastity).* Further, while Pārśvanātha’s followers used to wear white garment, Mahāvira prescribed nudity for his disciples. The adherents of Pārśvanātha and Mahāvira are known as Śvetāmbara and Digambara respectively.** The difference between the two sects was more in the matter of conduct rather than in doctrine.

In several Mathurā records, the Jain prophets are addressed as Arhat, Jina, Siddha, Bhāgavata,*** all of which tend to show that they conquered their passions and became omniscient. To the Jains, the 24 Tīrthaṅkaras, freed from the circles of births and deaths, are superior to all gods and are the highest objects of veneration. ¹⁸ "When the Venerable one had become an Arhat and Jina, he was a Kevalin, Omniscient and Comprehending all objects; he knew all conditions of the world, of gods, men and demons.”¹⁴ It is interesting that the Jains worshipped their prophets neither for the acquisition of some earthly possessions, nor for the spiritual bliss to be conferred by the saints, but only followed them to be purified and sanctified.¹⁵ In this connection, mention may be made of some phrases occurring in the inscriptions, which express the devotion of the Jains to their prophets:

---

*Essentially aparigraha is ‘non-acceptance of anything’ and brähmacarya, ‘celebacy’. The words are used in expanded senses.—Ed.*

**[The development of the two communities appears to be later. Nudity was meant for ascetics.—Ed.]

***[Bhagavat seems to be intended.—Ed.]


e.g., 'adoration to the Arhats'\textsuperscript{16}, 'adoration to the Arhats, the highest ones in the whole world,'\textsuperscript{17} 'adoration to all the Siddhas, to the Arhats,'\textsuperscript{18} 'adoration to the Arhat Vardhamāna',\textsuperscript{19} 'adoration to the Arhat Mahāvira',\textsuperscript{20} etc.

In the period under review, image-worship was very popular among the Jains although worship of the Jina image was in vogue as early as the fourth century B.C. According to the Hathigumpha inscription,\textsuperscript{21} a Jina statue, which had been carried away from Kalinga to Magadha by some Nanda king, was taken back to Kalinga by king Khāravela of the Cedi clan. Besides, a nude torso,\textsuperscript{22} supposed to be a Jina figure, found at Lohanipur in Patna, has been assigned to the Maurya period. It has been suggested\textsuperscript{23} that the worship of images was borrowed from the Brāhmaṇical Hindus first by the Jains and later on by the Buddhists. However, in addition to a number of Mathurā images of the Tirthaṅkaras mentioned above, a few more images, on which the names of the Jinas are not mentioned, were also discovered. The said records,\textsuperscript{24} except the one\textsuperscript{25} dated in the year 113 of the Gupta era, belong to the Kuśāṇa period. Besides, some epigraphs\textsuperscript{26} of the Kuśāṇa age record the dedication of fourfold images (sarvatobhadrikā pratimā) of the Jinas.

The practice of setting up āyāgapatās for the worship of Arhats is mentioned in the inscriptions.\textsuperscript{27} The word āyāga is

\begin{itemize}
  \item [\textsuperscript{17}] Ibid., Vol. I, p. 383.
  \item [\textsuperscript{21}] Sircar, Sel. Ins., Vol. 1, 1965, p. 217.
  \item [\textsuperscript{22}] JBOJS, Vol. XXIII, pp. 130-32.
  \item [\textsuperscript{23}] U. P. Shah, op. cit., pp. 39-40.
  \item [\textsuperscript{24}] Ibid., Nos. 22, 57, 75. 96; Ep. Ind., Vol. II, p. 204; JUPHS, Vol. XXIII, p. 49.
  \item [\textsuperscript{25}] Bhandarkar’s List, No. 1268.
  \item [\textsuperscript{26}] Lüders’ List, Nos. 24-25, 37, 112; Math. Ins., pp. 38-39.
  \item [\textsuperscript{27}] Lüders’ List, Nos. 94, 100, 103, 105-06.
\end{itemize}
supposed to be derived from the Sanskrit word āryaka meaning ‘honourable’ or ‘worthy of reverence.’ The word has been translated as a ‘tablet of homage or worship’. It is an ornamental slab with the statue of a Jina or some other venerable object at the centre. The slabs are usually of considerable artistic merit. Besides, the erection of śīlāpajās, āyagasabhā, torana, etc., in honour of the Arhats, is mentioned in inscriptions.

The words bhagavā Nemeso bhaga... (the divine Naigameṣa, the divine...) in archaic characters are engraved on a sculptural panel representing a seated male figure with goat’s head, and a male and some female figures standing, one of the latter with a child in her lap. As suggested by Bühler, Nemesa is mentioned as Hariṇēgamesi in the Kalpaśūtra, as Naigamesin in the Nemināthacarita and as Nejamesa or Naigameya in other works. Sometimes he is figured with the head of a ram or goat or antelope. He is connected with the procreation of children, and his representation in the inscribed panel, according to Bühler, illustrates a legend in the Kalpaśūtra. The story is that Hariṇēgamesi at the command of Indra, king of the gods, transferred the embryo of Mahāvīra from the womb of Devanandā, a Brāhmaṇa woman, to that of Triśalā, a Kṣatriya lady.

An inscription of the time of Mahākṣatrapa Śodāsa dated in the year 72 (16 A.D.) records that Āmohini, a female lay-disciple of the Kautsa race, established a statue of an Āryavati for the worship of the Arhats. Āryavati, according to Bühler, was a royal lady who had some importance in Jain legends.

30 Luders’ List, Nos. 93, 102, 108.
32 Ibid., pp. 314-18.
34 Luders’ List, No. 59.
U. P. Shah suggests that the lady can be identified with the mother of a Jina, probably Mahavira.

Another inscription incised on a large statue of an elephant surmounting the bell capital of a pillar records the erection of the image of Nandivishāla by Rudradāsa, the son of Śivadāsa, for the worship of the Arhats. Scholars differ regarding the interpretation of the word Nandivishāla. According to Cunningham, it refers to the elephant as the great Nandin. Bloch is of the opinion that the word is either a technical term of uncertain meaning or indicates the pillar which was ‘as big as Nandin’. Further, he says that the appellation Nandivishāla and the donor’s and his father’s names in the record allude to the fact that ‘Jainism apparently already in those early times was as much mixed up with Śaivism as its great rival Buddhism’. Lüders thinks that the word Nandivishāla ‘is the proper name of the elephant represented in the sculpture’ and does not accept Bloch’s theory about the mixing up of Buddhism and Jainism with Śaivism. In his opinion, Rudradāsa was probably a convert from Śaivism to Jainism.

The Jains pay homage to a class of divinities called Vidyādevī. According to their tradition, these goddesses, headed by Sarasvatī, are sixteen in number. An epigraphic record dated in the year 54 of the Kanishka or Śaka era records the dedication of a statue of Sarasvatī by a Jain lay disciple. This is supposed to be the earliest image of Sarasvatī discovered so far.

Jainism, like Buddhism, is a monastic religion and its adherents are divided into ascetics and lay disciples. The
Jains have no specific regulations restricting women from becoming followers of this faith. A good number of names of female ascetics and lay disciples are mentioned in inscriptions. In this connection, mention may be made of the Caturvarya-saṅgha (community of the four classes, viz. ascetics and lay followers of both sexes) referred to in an inscription of the Kuśāṇa period dated in the year 62 of the Kaṇiṣka or Śaka era.

The Jain Kalpasūtra states that the monastic order was divided and subdivided into several gaṇas, kulas and sākhās. This is supported by the early inscriptions of Mathura, which mention certain gaṇas, kulas and sākhās and also sambhogas. The gaṇas called Koṭṭiya, Vāraṇa and Āry Odehikiya are mentioned in several records. Inscriptions of the Kuśāṇa age not only contain the earliest reference to the Koṭṭiyaganā, but also mention it in a large number of cases. The kulas mentioned as belonging to this group include Brahmādāsika, Sthānikiya, Vaccumiya and Prdyasa valahaṃka and its different sākhās likewise include Uccenāgari, Āryaveri, Vairī, Majhamā and Vidyādhari. The sambhogas of

43 Lüders' List, No. 57.
44 SBE, Vol. XXII, pp. 286-94. There are altogether nine gaṇas with these various kulas and sākhās.
45 Lüders' List, Nos. 18-19.
46 See Lüders' List, Nos. 17-20, 22, 23a, 25, 27-29, 32, 36, 39, 45a, 47, 53-54, 56, 73, 75, 77, 84, 89c, 107f. 121-22, 124. Bhandarkar's List, No. 1268 mentioning this gaṇa belongs to the Gupta period.
47 Lüders' List, Nos. 18-20, 23a, 29, 32, 45a, 46, 121-22.
49 Lüders' List, Nos. 25, 107f.
50 Ibid., No. 73.
51 Ibid., Nos. 18-20, 23a, 29, 32, 45a, 46, 71, 77, 119, 121-22.
52 Ibid., Nos. 27, 36.
53 Ibid., Nos. 22, 28, 39, 47, 53-54, 56, 75, 89c; Ep. Ind., Vol. X, p. 110; JUPHS, Vols. XXIV-XXV, p. 219. Āryaveri and Vairī are the appellations of Vajrīn in the Kalpasūtra.
54 Lüders' List, No. 73.
55 Bhandarkar's List, No. 1268.
Kottiyagana, as mentioned in the epigraphs, are Śrīgṛha and Śrīka.56

The Kottiyagana is found in the Kalpasūtra as Kauṭikagana,56 the founders of which were Susthita and Supratibuddha. In the Mathurā inscriptions of different dates, the following heads of the gana, styled Gaṅin, are mentioned: Ārya Puṣila, Ārya Pāla, Ja-mitra (?), Ārya Māghahastin and Ārya Kharṇa.59

Another gana, called Cārana in the Kalpasūtra and stated to have been founded by Śrīgupta, is mentioned as Vāraṇa in the inscriptions.61 Its kulas, mentioned in inscriptions, are Ārya Hāṭṭakakīya,52 Nāḍīka,63 Petivamika,64 Puṣyamitriya,66 Ārya Kantyasīka,67 Ārya Cetiya68 and Ārya Bhvīṣṭa,66 while its sākhas are Vajanagari,69 Haritumālakadhi,70 Samkasiyā71 and sambhogas Āṃśikāya,72 Śrīya73 and Śrīgṛha.74 According

56 Lüders’ List, No. 1268.
57 Ibid., Nos. 28, 39, 121. The Kalpasūtra does not mention the sambhogas.
58 SBE, Vol. XXII, p. 292. According to the Kalpasūtra, this gana was divided into four kulas, viz. Brahmaliptuka, Vārsatiya, Vāṇiya, Praśna-vāhanaka, and four sākhas, viz., Uccana-gari, Vidvādhari, Vajrin and Madhyamikā all of which are referred to in the inscriptions of Mathurā.
59 Lüders’ List, Nos. 23a, 29, 53-54, 56.
61 Lüders’ List, Nos. 16, 31, 34, 37, 42, 48, 49, 50, 58, 59a 113, 116-17. Reference to the Vāraṇa-gana is found only in the Kuśāṇa inscriptions, the earliest of which (ibid., No. 16) is dated in the Kaniṣṭha or Śaka year 4.
62 Lüders’ List, Nos. 16, 48, 116.
63 Ibid., No. 117.
64 Ibid., Nos. 31, 45, 107d.
65 Ibid., No. 34.
66 Ibid., No. 113.
67 Ibid., No. 42.
68 Ibid., No. 50. Lüders thinks it to be a mistake for Ārya-Kanyasīka.
69 Ibid., Nos. 16, 48, 59a, 107d, 116.
70 Ibid., No. 42.
71 Ibid., No. 50.
72 Ibid., No. 116.
73 Ibid., Nos. 48, 59a.
74 Ibid., No. 50.
to the Kalpasūtra, the said gāna consisted of seven kulas and four sākhās. Amongst the kulas known from inscriptions, Ārya Hāṭṭakiya, Petivamika, Puṣyamitriya, Ārya Kassiyasika and Ārya Četiya correspond respectively to Hāridraka, Pritidharmika, Puṣyamitrika, Kṛṣṇasakha and Ārya Čelaya of the Kalpasūtra. Amongst the sākhās mentioned in the Kalpasūtra, except Gavedhukā three others are known from the Mathurā inscriptions, Ārya Data, Ārya Nandika and Dinara were heads of the Vāraṇa-gāna at different dates during the Kuśāna age.

The gāna called Ārya Odehikiya, which is the same as Uddeka of the Kalpasūtra, is mentioned with its divisions and subdivisions in two Kuśāna records, dated in the Kaniska-Śaka years 7 and 98 respectively. The kulas of this gāna are Ārya Nāgabhuṭakiya and Paridhāsika while its sākhā is Petaputrika. According to the Kalpasūtra, the gāna founded by Ajja Ronana is divided into six kulas and four sākhās.

Besides, two other Kuśāna inscriptions refer to one kula entitled Mehiika which, according to the Kalpasūtra, belongs to the Vesavāḍiya gāna. Thus the reference to the Mehiikakula in the inscriptions points to the existence of the Vesavāḍiya-gāna at Mathurā. This gāna was divided into four kulas and subdivided into four sākhās, its pioneer being Kāmarddhī.

The division of the church into several gānas, kulas and sākhās and also into sambhoggas was a peculiarity of the Jains and was not found among other Indian religious sects. Gāna means ‘school’, kula ‘family’ and sākhā ‘branch’; but the actual meanings of the terms are doubtful. Jacobi suggests that gāna meaning ‘school’ is derived from one teacher, while

---

76 Lüders’ List, Nos. 34, 37, 50.
78 Lüders’ List, Nos. 21, 76.
kula indicates 'succession of teachers in one line', and śākhā 'the lines which branch off from each teacher'. He further holds that the modern gaccha is the same as the ancient gana.

In addition to the Ganins, the inscriptions record the names of several Vācakas (preachers) of the Jain community. That there was perhaps no restriction for a single person to hold the two positions simultaneously, is suggested by two Kuṣāṇa records mentioning one person as both Ganin and Vācaka. Thus the Jain church was a well organised community in the early centuries of the Christian era.

Inscriptions show that the followers of the Jain creed belonged mostly to the trading class. That the foreigners were sometimes converted to Jainism is evident from two inscriptions, the first of which records the dedication of an image of Mahāvīra by Okhārikā, Ujhatikā, Okhā, Śirika and Śivadina in the year 292 of the Parthian era, while the second mentions the setting up of an image of Vardhamāṇa by Okhārikā, the daughter of Dimitra. Lüders has pointed out that the said names are of foreign origin.


84 Lüders' List, No. 50, states that Dinara was a great preacher as well as the head of the Vāranagana, while in another record (ibid., No. 29) Ja-mitra (?) was at the same time the preacher and the head of the Kossiyagana.


86 D. R. Bhandarkar Volume, pp. 283-84.
VII
AN UNNOTICED JAIN CAVERN NEAR MADURANTAKAM
Sm. R. Champakalakshmi, Madras University

About 22 kms. south-east of Madurantakam in the Chingleput District, on the Cheyur Road, lies a range of low hills, locally called Pañcapāṇḍavamalai, near the village of Onambakkam. Two of them called Karuppankunțu and Uṣimalai (or Dēvaṇūrmalai) were once occupied by the Jains. They contain natural caverns (Figs. 1-2) with chiselled rock beds used by Jain ascetics for several centuries in the first millennium A.D. On the Karuppankunțu, which is about 217 feet high, are also found sculptures representing three Jain Tirthaṅkaras, viz. Ādinātha, Pārśvanātha and Mahāvīra. Of the three, the bas-reliefs of Ādinātha (Fig. 3) and Mahāvīra are carved on the face of the rock near the path leading to the cavern on the top. The sculpture of Pārśvanātha (Fig. 4) is, however, remarkable, for it is carved inside a shrine-like niche on a separate boulder resembling the bas-reliefs of Māmallapuram. To the right of this niche, on the same rock, is an inscription in early Grantha and Tamil characters assignable to the 8th century A.D. (Fig. 5), giving the name of the Jain teacher, Vasudeva Siddānta-bhaṭāra, who caused the shrine to be made. The Jain teacher is also called the founder of The Twenty-four Caturvīṃśati-sthāpaka).

The ‘Twenty-four’ may refer to the twenty-four Tirthaṅkaras of the Jains. It may also indicate that the number twenty-four, being sacred to the Jains, was often used by them to form committees of twenty-four for religious and social purposes. Such a committee is mentioned in a Cola inscription of 945 A.D. dated in the 38th regnal year of Parāntaka I, for Vīḷāppākkam in the North Arcot District. The inscription records the sinking of a well by Paṭṭinikkuratti-
adiga], a female disciple of Ariṣṭanēmi-piḍārar of Tiruppān-
malai. The well and a house were constituted into a nunnery
under the supervision of ‘the Twenty-four’ of the place. The
twenty-four possibly formed a local Jain committee, which
managed the affairs of the pen-palli or nunnery. The Tiruppān-
malai or Paṇcaṇḍavamalai is a hillock near Viḷāppākkam
and contains Jain sculptures and inscriptions of the Pallava
and Cola periods, i.e. belonging to dates from the 8th to the
11th century A.D.

Near the cavern on the top of the Karuppankaṇṭu, brick bats
and traces of a brick structure can be seen even now. They
indicate that a structural chamber or maṇḍapa was once
attached to the cavern. The cavern with beds on the Karuppan-
kuṇṭu is the first of its kind so far known in the Chingleput
District. Similar Jain caverns with beds have been found in
considerable numbers in other parts of Tondaimaṇḍalam (North
and South Arcot Districts), where Jain sculptures and inscrip-
tions of the 8th and 9th centuries have been recorded.
Brāhmi inscriptions, which invariably accompany such caverns
with beds in the southern Districts of Tamilnadu, are con-
spicuous by their absence in this region, the only exception
being Māmaṇḍūr in the North Arcot District, where, however,
no Jain sculptures have been found along with the cavern with
beds.

The Brāhmi inscriptions of the southern Districts of Madu-
rai and Tirunelveli and also the Districts of Tiruchirappalli
and Coimbatore belong to the period from the 2nd century B.C.
to the 3rd century A.D. Māmaṇḍūr contains a Brāhmi inscrip-
tion of about 2nd or 3rd century A. D. The earliest Jain
inscriptions of the Tondaimaṇḍalam region belong to the 5th
century A.D. as evidenced by the palaeography of the Tiru-
nāṭharkaṇṭu inscriptions in the South Arcot District. The
majority of the Jain inscriptions on hills with natural

3 I. Mahadevan, Corpus of the Tamil Brāhmi Inscriptions, App. 1,
caverns or rock-cut caves in this region belong to a period from about the 7th or 8th to the 10th or 11th century A.D. They point to the later period as the most flourishing one for the Jain religion in this region. Literary evidences from the Tēvāraṁ hymns of about the 7th to the 9th century A.D. and the Periya Purāṇam of the 12th century A.D., however, would show that the Jains were very numerous all over Tamilnadu before the period of the Nāyanmārs (the exponents of bhakti) and the crusade waged against the Jains by them brought about the downfall of the Jains in many important centres including Kāñcipuram and Madurai, the Pallava and Pāṇḍya capitals respectively.

Illustrations

Fig. 3. Ādinātha.—This figure represents a Jain Tirthaṅkara, probably, the first Tirthaṅkra Ādinātha, seated with legs crossed and the open palms of the hand placed one over the other in the dhāyaṇa (meditation) posture. There is a triple umbrella (mukkuḍai) above the figure, which is a characteristic feature of all Tirthaṅkara icons. Two attendants holding flywhisks are represented on either side. The style of carving is typical of the Pallava period and hence the sculpture may roughly be assigned to the 7th or 8th century A.D.

Fig. 4. Pārśvanātha.—Carved within a fairly deep niche is the figure of the 23rd Tirthaṅkara Pārśvanātha, standing in what is known as the kāyotsarga posture under a five-hooded snake canopy. The serpent's hood is a special iconographic feature of this Tirthaṅkara, as also of another called Supārśva.

The niche in which the image is carved is surmounted by a śikhara resembling the four-sided śikharas on niches in many reliefs of Māmallapuram, which are styled by K. R. Srinivasan as sama-caturāra-kūṭas with nāgara-śikharas representing ekalavimānas.4 The carving of this image is also similar

---

4 'Pallava Architecture of South India', Ancient India, No. 14, 129, Pl. XVII A-B.
Fig. 1. Rock-beds—Ușimalai.
Fig. 2. Rock-cut Bed—Karuppankurru.
Fig. 3. Adinātha—Karuppankunuṟu.
Fig. 4. Pārśvanātha—Karuppan kutru.
Fig. 5. The Karuppankuru Inscription.
to that of the sculptures of Māmallapuram. There is little doubt that the sculptures on this hill were executed sometime during the 7th and 8th centuries A.D.

Fig. 5. Text of the inscription mentioning Vasudeva Siddhānta-bhaṭāra—

1. Śrī-Caturvini-
2. śati-sthāva(pa)ka-Va-
3. sudeva Siddhā.
4. nta-bhaṭārar
5. āyvitta
6. devāram (II)
VIII
JAINISM IN TONDAIMANDALAM
Sm. R. Champakalakshmi, Madras University

The advent of Jainism in South India is attributed, on the basis of a Digambara tradition, to the migration of the Jain community under the Srutakevalin Bhadrabāhu to the Mysore region in the beginning of the 3rd century B.C.1 Its further movement into the Tamil country can be traced through the Kongu region southwards to the southernmost Districts of Tamilnadu, where we come across the earliest Brāhmi inscriptions associated with the Jains.2

The provenance of the early Brāhmi records indicates their probable movement from Mysore through the Kongu country to the Madurai-Tirunelveli regions, a few Jains trickling into some of the adjoining areas like Tiruchirappalli. This view is strengthened by the same Digambara tradition, according to which Bhadrabāhu perceiving his end when he reached Śravana Belgola, sent his disciples under one Viśākhācārya to the Cola and Pāṇḍya countries.3

Subsequently, the religion may have spread into Tondaimandalam, where the earliest Brāhmi record comes from Māmaṇḍūr in the North Arcot District4 with, however, no definite Jain associations. The Tirunāthakunṟu epitaphs5 of two Jain teachers, Candranandi-ācārya and Iṭaiyapaḍārār, are of primary importance for fixing the beginning of the history of the Jain religion in Tondaimandalam about the

4 A. R. Ep., 1939-42, No. 171; Mahadevan, op. cit., No. XVIII.
5th century A.D. Tamil literature of the pre-Tevāram period is not of much help in fixing the beginnings of Jain history in this region. The Sangam works have hardly any notable reference to this faith in the Tamil country, though the two epics, Śilappadikāram and Maṇimēkalai, contain numerous accounts relating to the Jains. However, the date of the epics is a matter of controversy, some scholars assigning them to the 2nd century A.D. and others to the post-Sangam period, i.e. after the 3rd century A.D. In addition, their references relate more directly to the Cōla, Pāṇḍya and Cēra countries.

The Padinenkīkanakku works, of which the greater number including the Kurāl are probably of Jain authorship, appear to be works of the post-Sangam period and would hardly serve our purpose in discussing Jain history in the northern parts of Tamilnadu, except that Valluvar, the author of the Kurāl is said to be a native of Mayilāppūr (Mylapore in Madras). Further more, the Kalabhras, who are believed to have been followers of Jainism and Buddhism and to have created a political and cultural vacuum in Tamilnadu after the Sangam age, are known to have occupied some parts of the Pāṇḍya and Cōla countries and not directly any part of Tondaimandalam. The revival of Pāṇḍya power, together with 'the old order' of things, is assigned to Kaṇungon's line in Madurai, i.e. from about the close of the 6th century A.D. Much is made of Pallava Simhavishnu's role in the extirpation of the Kalabhras, while, in reality, the Pallava claims regarding his achievements probably adopted the usual mode of listing a number of the then known powerful ruling families. There is no question of a revival of Pallava power in Tondaimandalam. For all available evidences point to their more or less continuous occupation of this region from the time of Viṣṇugopa (c. 350 A.D.) to the 9th century A.D. The Loka-vibhāga datum supports our view by supplying the Śaka


7 See T. V. Mahalingam, Kāñchipuram in Early South Indian History, Chapters II ff.
equivalent of the 22nd regnal year of a Simhavarman as 380 = 458 A.D.⁸ It also lends additional support in fixing the
beginnings of Jain history (the only literary evidence before the
Tēvārām) in about the 5th century A.D., for it was copied by
one Sarvanandīn, a Jain teacher in Pāṭalikā (Pāṭalipura or
Tiruppādirippuliyūr near Cuddalore in the South Arcot
District)⁹ where a Jain monastery existed at least from the
middle of the 5th century till probably the first half of the
7th, the period of Appar or Tirunāvukkaraśar, one of the
Tēvārām trio.¹⁰

The above survey of evidences available from epigraphy
and literature regarding the initial appearance of Jainism in
Togdaimandalam has been necessary to establish (1) that the
religion spread there much later than in the southernmost
districts, probably after the 4th century A.D., and (2) that
the religion could not have spread in the area through
Āndhradēśa as suggested by Dr. P. B. Desai.¹¹ More than
all this, the Jain epigraphs in this region become more numer-
ous only after the 7th century and, curiously enough, belong
to that period, i.e. 8th and 9th centuries (and also later under
the Cōlas in the 10th, 11th and 12th centuries), which followed
the oft-quoted conversion of the royal benefactor, Mahendra-
varman I (c. 600-30 A.D.), from Jainism to Śaivism, inspired
by the conversion of Appar to Śaivism, as one of the causes
for the decline of the Jain faith.

The religious conflict between the exponents of the Bhakti
cult and the so-called 'heterodox' Buddhists and Jains is said
to have raged between the 7th and 9th centuries A.D.* and, if

⁸ Ibid., p. 43.
¹⁰ P. B. Desai says that the Drāviḍa-saṅgha existed at Pāṭalipura as
early as the 1st century B. C. (op. cit., p. 49). This is not acceptable.
¹¹ Desai, op. cit., pp. 25, 32.

*[From about the beginning of the 5th century, the Pallava kings claim
to have been Kali-yuga-dyaśasaiva-dharm-oddharam-svita-samaddhas
which apparently refers to Brāhmaṇical success against Buddhism and
the Jain inscriptions are any proof, the admitted success of the Śaiva and Vaiṣṇava saints (such as Appar and Sambandar and Tirumalaiśai, Toṇḍaradippodi and Tirumaṅgai) failed—paradoxically—to root out the heresy against which they spearheaded their activities.

The course of events appear to be quite different and may be outlined briefly as follows. Jainism spread in Toṇḍai-mangalām from about the 4th century A.D. and acquired numerous votaries by the 7th century incurring the hostility of the adherents of the Śaiva and Vaiṣṇava faiths. A Jain monastery of considerable importance flourished in Pāṭalikā from the 5th century A.D. and even attracted Appar who, as Dharmasena, became its Abbot in the 7th century. Appar or Tirunāvukkarasār, later turned to Śaivism and lamented his past associations with the Jains whom he accuses in his hymns of having persecuted him. The Periya Purāṇam, a later work and a well-known Śaiva hagiological text, highlights these events in the Tirunāvukkarasār Purāṇam and brings in a Kāḍava who, inspired by Appar, turned to the Śaiva faith and destroyed the monastery at Pāṭalipura to erect a Śiva temple at Tiruvadigai (South Arcot District) called Guṇadara-viccuram. Guṇadharā is equated with Guṇabharā and hence identified with Pallava Mahendravarman I.

Mahendravarman’s predilection to Jainism need not be disputed when one considers the Jain leanings of some of his predecessors, including the mother of Simhaviṣṇu, i.e. the queen of Simhavarman. In his sixth regnal year (i.e. before 550 A.D.) Simhavarman issued the Pallankoil copper-plate grant, donating lands to a Jain teacher Vajranandin for conducting worship in the Vardhamāna temple at Paruttikunru, the same as Tirupparuttikunru or Jina-Kāñci which contains

---

13 Tēvāram.
14 Tirunāvukkarasār Purāṇam.
an old temple of Mahāvira, renovated subsequently under the Cōla and Vijayanagar rulers. This Jain centre near Kāñcipuram was the pontifical seat of the Jains before it was superseded by Cittāmūr, the present headquarters of the Pontiff of the Tamil Jains, probably after the 15th century A.D. The close relations that existed between the Pallavas and Gaṅgas in the 6th century also account for the popularity of Jainism.

Mahendravarman's leanings to Jainism are also believed to be implied in the absence of any reference to the Jains in his well-known satire in Sanskrit, the Mattavilāśapraha-sana. His conversion to Śaivism is likewise read into the words of the famous Tiruchirappalli cave inscription, viz., vipakṣa-vṛtteḥ parāvṛttam (turned from hostile conduct, etc., to the worship of the liṅga) found in the Lalitāṅkura-Pallaveśvaragṛha. However, the controversy over the interpretation of this record has not yet been set at rest.

If the Periya Purāṇam reference to a Kāḍava is to Mahendravarman (Guṇaḥbara), then his conversion led to serious consequences for the Jains, who lost an important monastic centre at Pāṭalikā. At Tiruvadigai, there is a much dilapidated brick shrine, containing even to-day a huge Dhārā-liṅga of the Pallava style, which goes by the name of Guṇadara-viccuram. The area contains a few Jain vestiges, and the saint convert Appar is said to have realised the superiority of the Śaiva religion at this Viraṭānām or Śiva temple.

The religious activities of Mahendravarman's successors would in no way indicate a complete annihilation of the Jains after the 7th century. Most of them personally favoured the Śaiva and Vaiṣṇava faiths, but, as true statesmen, did not

18 Guṇaḥbara-nāmii rōjāni anena liṅgana liṅgini jāānami /
prathatām cirāya loke vipakṣa-vṛtteḥ parāvṛttam! /

[S. Ind. Ins., Vol. I, p. 29]
neglect the protagonists of the other faiths. They even patronised Jain centres, institutions and temples by extending their largesses liberally. Hsuen-tsang, who visited India in the 7th century A.D. and was at Kāṇcī about 643 A.D., declares that the Jains were very numerous in his days and that Buddhism and Brāhmaṇism were almost on a par.\(^{19}\)

Rājasimha, a pious Śaiva, built the Candraprabha temple at Jina-Kāṇcī.\(^{20}\) Under Nandivarman II, Jain monasteries and nunneries flourished at Veduāl, Tiruppaṇmalai and Sattamaṅgalam in the North Arcot District. In many of these places, the Cōlas took up the work of the Pallavas in patronising Jain institutions such as those at Veduāl, Tiruppaṇmalai and Tirumalai.

Following the Cōlas, the Kāḍavarāyas, Pāṇḍyas and Vijayanagar rulers continued to favour the Jain institutions, though not with the same zeal that characterised their activities relating to the other faiths, particularly their personal faiths. Thus from about the 5th to the 13th century A.D., the Jains enjoyed patronage under the Pallavas and Cōlas, in spite of the Bhakti movement. However, the Cōla period, which is the golden age of the Śaiva religion, witnessed the decline of some Jain centres after the age of Rājaṟāja I. Contact with Karnāṭaka probably kept alive some of the Jain institutions such as those of Tirumalai, Cittāmūr and Jina-Kāṇcī and further south in the Pudukkottai, Madurai, Ramanathpuram and Tirunelveli areas.

By virtue of their rich contribution to Tamil literature, the Jains retained their importance and position unimpaired in the intellectual world. Most of their works, e.g., the major kāvyas like the Jivakacintāmaṇi, and Vaiḻaiyāpati, minor kāvyas like the Nilakesi and Perumkathai and works on grammar, prosody and lexicography like the Nammūl, the three Nigandus and


Yāpparunīgalaṃ and its Kārīgāl (commentary) were produced in this period, i.e. between the 9th and 12th centuries A.D.

The Jains of the Tamil country, including Tondaimanḍalam, looked upon Śravaṇa Belgola as the principal seat of their religion. The hills of Śravaṇa-Belgola are full of later epigraphs recording the visits of monks and lay worshippers from the south. The fortunes of Jainism in Tamilnadu were closely linked with the history of the faith in Karnāṭaka. The activities of some of the celebrated Jain teachers and their achievements in the field of religion and philosophy, not to speak of literature, brought the Tamil land into close touch with Karnāṭaka. The most celebrated names of Jain teachers who were responsible for the diffusion of Jainism in the Tamil country were Sāmantabhadra, Pūjyapāda and Akalanka. The necessary resources for the spread of the Jain faith thus seem to have come from Karnāṭaka. Of the above three, Sāmantabhadra and Akalanka were more closely connected with Tondaimanḍalam, particularly Kāñci.

Kundakundācārya, who is said to be the first in almost all the genealogies of the southern Jains (as the founder of the Mūla Saṅgha) is also associated with the spread and dissemination of Jain ideals in the Tamil country. He is said to have lived in the beginning of the Christian era and is believed to have become the Pontiff of the Jains about 8 B.C. with his seat at Pāṭaliputra (same as Pāṭalipura in the South Arcot District), written several works in Prakrit for the benefit of his royal disciple of the Pallava dynasty, Śivakumāra, and made successful journeys to the Pāṇḍya, Cōla and Cēra kingdoms as a missionary spreading the Jina-dharma and converting people. Jain tradition further says that he also bore the name Elācārya (or Heḷācārya), composed the Kūṭaḷ and gave it to his disciple Tiruvalluvar who introduced it to the

Sangam at Madurai. The above traditions have no basis, and there are more than one Jain teacher who bore the name Elācārya. There is hardly any proof that Kundakunda visited the Tamil country or that he became the Pontiff at Pātaliputra. It is also significant that the palm-leaf manuscript (without heading) from the Vardhamāna temple at Tirupparuttikkunram giving a list of the principal propagators of dharma in the fifth age (dusama) as Mukhya-Paścamakāla-Dharma-pravartakas mentions Kundakunda and Helācārya as distinct from each other and places them as the sixth and fifth respectively in the line of propagators.

Intimate association of the Jain gurus of Karnāṭaka with the Tamil country seems to have begun only after Sāmantabhadra. He is generally accepted to have lived in the earlier part of the 2nd century A.D. But inscriptions mentioning him and recording his activities belong to a much later period, ranging from the beginning of the 12th century to the 15th century. In some of them, he is placed as Pontiff immediately after Kundakunda and, in others, his place is next to Balākapiṇicca, a disciple of Kundakunda; but he was not the immediate disciple of Balākapiṇicca. The palm-leaf manuscript from Jina-Kāāci, mentioned above, speaks of Sāmantabhadra as the twentyfourth in the line of principal propagators, i.e., he is separated from Kundakunda by eighteen other Jain teachers.

Sāmantabhadra is known to have visited Kāṇcipuram. A Śravāna Belgaum record of 1129 A.D. gives a graphic description of his career, stating that he visited several important cities including Pātaliputra (probably Patna as it is

24 B. A. Saleatore, op. cit., p. 53.
27 B. A. Saleatore, op. cit., p. 225.
28 Ep. Carn., Vol. 11, Nos. 64, 66-67 and 258.
29 Ibid., No. 67.
followed by other northern countries) and Kāncipura. The inscription does not say what he did at Kāncipura; but the mention of ‘the beating of drum’ suggests that he went there with the intention of challenging and inviting religious disputants.

Another interesting feature of his activities is the conversion of a king called Śivakōṭi to Jainism and, according to the Jain tradition as recorded in the Rājavalikāthe of Devacandra, Śivakōṭi was a king of Kānci. The king, on perceiving the miracle performed by the Jain teacher, is said to have abdicated, taken dikṣū and come to be called Śivakōṭi Ācārya. It may be noted that the palm-leaf manuscript from Jina-Kānci mentions one Śivakōṭi as the 25th propagator, after Sāmanta-bhadra and before Pūjayapāda. The identity of the kings Śivakumāra and Śivakōṭi and the periods of their rule over Kānci are matters on which nothing can be said.

There is, however, little reason to doubt that Sāmanta-bhadra’s activities accentuated the spread of the Jain faith in the Tamil country, particularly at Kānci and the surrounding regions. Not a mere ‘promulgator’ of the Jain doctrine, this famous teacher was also a great writer and his advent in South India marks an important epoch in the annals of the Digambara tradition.

Pūjayapāda is the next important name in the promulgation of the Jain faith in the Tamil country, as mentioned in the Jina-Kānci manuscript. A Pūjayapāda is said to have been the preceptor of Vajranandin who founded the Drāvida Saṅgha in Madurai in c. 470 A.D. Jain tradition speaks of a Pūjayapāda who practised yoga, acquired psychic powers, travelled throughout South India, encountered disputants and vanquished them in open debate. He made valuable contributions to Jain philosophy, logic and grammar through his writings. 30

His date is a matter of controversy, B. L. Rice placing him about the first half of the 7th century as the spiritual preceptor of the Ganga king Durvinita and Narasimhachar assigning him to the latter half of the 5th and the beginning of the 6th century A.D. If the latter date is the correct one, then he may have been the same as Vajranandin’s preceptor.

Akaḷaṇḍa was the next Jain teacher, whose activities at Kāṇcī are said to have resulted in the complete annihilation of the Buddhists about the close of the 8th century A.D. He is said to have defeated the Buddhists in disputation at the court of king Himaśītala and procured their expulsion from South India. Numerous epigraphs from Kāṇṭaka refer to this victory of Akaḷaṇḍa; but the identity of king Himaśītala remains a matter of uncertainty. Akaḷaṇḍa is believed to have been a contemporary of the Rāṣṭra-kūṭa monarch Danti-durga and hence is assigned to the latter part of the 8th century A.D.

According to one of the Mackenzie Manuscripts, Himaśītala was a king of Kāṇcī. Akaḷaṇḍa, it is said, was partly educated in the Buddhists’ college at Pontagai, disputed with them in the presence of the last Buddhist prince Himaśītala and defeated them. The prince became a Jain and the Buddhists were banished to Kandi. The Buddhist college is said to have existed at Āḷipaḍaitāṅgi, a Buddhist settlement between Jina-Kāṇcī and Arcot (?). The two Jain students, Akaḷaṇḍa and Niśkaḷaṇḍa, who had come to study there, quarrelled with the Buddhist teachers and left the school. Akaḷaṇḍa went to Śravaṇa Belgoḷa and studied Jain philosophy, became a monk and returned to the east. He defeated the Buddhist teachers in a learned assembly presided over by the king. 

---

33 B. A. Salotore, op. cit., pp. 19, 22.
34 M. S. Ramaswamy Ayyangar, Studies in South Indian Jainism, p. 31.
Jina-Kāñci, is said to have been the seat of Akaalāka. The Jina-Kāñci manuscript, cited earlier, also gives the names of Akαlaṅka and Niśkalaṅka after Pūjyapāda, as the principal propagators of the Jain faith.38

K. R. Subramaniam identifies Himaśitala with Hiranyavarman, father of Nandivarman Pallavamalla.59 In 718 A.D., the ruler of Kāñci was Nandivarman Pallavamalla himself. Curiously enough, this king is said to have persecuted the Jains, and evidence for it is supposed to exist among the historical sculptures of the Vaikunthha Perumal temple at Kāñci-puram.40 Again, in the Udayendiram copper-plates of his period, the king is said to have confiscated the lands of those whose observances were not in accordance with the law (dharma) and granted them to Brahmaṇas with all exemptions.41 This is taken to be a reference to the Jains and the confiscation of their lands by the king. But Jain inscriptions of Nandivarman's time are quite numerous and indicate that he was in no way a persecutor of the Jains.

An account of the Jain centres in Tondaimandalam under the Pallavas and other ruling families is furnished below.

Under the Pallavas. In the time of Nandivarman II, several Jain centres seem to have flourished, particularly in the hilly regions of the North Arcot District. One of them was Veḍal which had a monastery (Vidār-palli) and also a nunnery.42 It continued to be an important centre under the Cōla king Āditya I, who supplanted Pallava power in Tondaimandalam.43

Agalūr, near Veḍal, had a Jain institution, to which a grant was made in the 50th year of Nandivarman II (780-81 A.D.).44
Not far from Večal is a hill called Pañcapāṇḍavamalai (also known as Tiruppāṇimalai) on which the sculpture of Pongiya-
KKiyār (Siddhāyikā), attended by a Jain teacher, Nāganandin, was caused to be engraved by a private individual in the 50th
year of the same ruler. Nāganandin was a pupil of the Jain
preceptor Sīmhanandikuruvadiṣgl of Ānanār. This hill
continued to flourish as a Jain stronghold under the Cōla
kings Parāntaka I and Rājarāja I.  

Sāttamaṅgalam is another village in the same region, where
a Jain temple with a monastery, existed in the periods of
Nandivarman II and Kampavaran and also under the Cōlas.
Inscriptions of Nandivarman II dated in his 14th (744-45
A.D.) and 56th (786-87 A.D.) reignal years record gifts for
feeding ascetics in the local temple. The gifts were made by
the Jain teachers, Itāgrapanaṇandi and Jinyaṇi. Under
Kampavaran about (875-76 A.D.), the Jain temple was
renovated, a mukhamandapa was added, a shrine for Yakṣa
Bhaṭṭāri was built and gifts were made by Mándavi, wife of
Kāḍagatiyanayar. An inscription (995 A.D.) of Rājarāja
calls this temple ‘Vimala-Śriyārya-Tirtha-palli’.  

Nandivarman II also seems to have made grants to the Jain
temple at Perumandur in the South Arcot District. The
inscription, which records the gift, mentions the name of the
king as Vijaya-Nandivikramavarman, originally regarded as a
Gaṅga-Pallava.  

Thus the period of Nandivarman II represents an important
epoch for the Jain faith in Tonḍaimandalam. Most of the Jain
centres of this period belong to the North Arcot District and
the discovery of Karuppankunju adds one more in the
Chingleput District. Quite a few Jain centres seem to have
flourished under the Pallavas in the South Arcot District

48 Loc. cit.
49 Loc. cit.
also, such as Tirunaruṅgondai, Perumāṇḍur, Cittāmūr, Sōlavāṇḍipuram, Toṇḍūr Olakkūr and Paḷlicandal. Yet, in these centres, no Pallava inscriptions have come to light, while epigraphs from the early Cōla period are numerous.

Under the Cōlas. Under Āditya I, a nunnery headed by Kannakavirakkārtti existed at Veṭāl in the Noth Arcot District. The same nunnery (peṭu-paṭṭi) probably finds mention in an inscription (945 A.D.) from Viḷāppākkam, dated in the reign of Parāntaka I, which records the sinking of a well by Paṭṭinikkurattidigal, a female disciple of one Ariṣṭanēmipīḍārar of the Tiruppāṇmalai, the latter hill being not far from Veṭāl. The well and a house were constituted into a nunnery under the supervision of the ‘twenty-four’ of the place.

Parāntaka I made a gift of gold to Vardhamāṇappperiya-digal of Jinagirippaḷḷi, an important Jain monastery at Ānandamaṅgalam in the Chingleput District in the 10th century A.D. Ānandamaṅgalam contains a hillock with Jain sculptures on a big boulder representing Neminātha and his Yakṣi Dharmadevi, and Mahāvīra and his Yakṣi Siddhāyikā. Parāntaka I also made endowments to the Jain temples at Tirumalai in the North Arcot District, and Paḷlicandal in the South Arcot District.

Early Cōla records from Sōlavāṇḍipuram in the South Arcot District speak of the endowments made to the local Jain institution by a Milādu chief under the Cōla king Gaṇḍarāditya in the latter part of the 10th century A.D. The grants were made for the maintenance of ascetics and entrusted to Kuṇavirabhātāra of Kuṇandi. At Sōlavāṇḍipuram, rock-cut beds and sculptures of Jain deities are found on the hill. Similar rock-cut beds are found also at Toṇḍūr in the same District, where two Cōla inscriptions refer to a Jain monastery (?) known as Vaḷuvāmoliṭṭeperumpaḷḷi, to

which grants of \textit{pallivilāgam} and \textit{palliccandam} were made by a local chief.\textsuperscript{55} A Gaḍḍarādittapperumpalli existed at Palliccandal (Jambai) in the South Arcot District.\textsuperscript{67}

Tirakkol in the North Arcot District, which contains a big boulder with Jain sculptures, was another Jain centre of the early Cōla period. Three inscriptions of a Parakesarivarman record gifts to the local Jain temple of Vardhamāna, which was known as Gaṅgasūrapperumpalli.\textsuperscript{68} This village is also situated not far from Vedāil.

Among the Cōlas the most well-known benefactors of the Jains were Rājarāja I and his elder sister Kundavai. The latter rebuilt the Jain temple at Tirumalai, which dates from much earlier times, and hence it came to be called Kundavai Jinalaya.\textsuperscript{69} She built another Jain temple, also called Kundai Jinalaya, at Dādāpuram in the South Arcot District and made costly endowments to it.\textsuperscript{70} She was also the author of the Jain temple at Tirumalavādi in the Tiruchirappalli District.\textsuperscript{71} As mentioned earlier, Tiruppāṭmalai in the North Arcot District received the patronage of Lāṭarāja Vira Cōla (993 A.D.), a feudatory of Rājarāja I.\textsuperscript{62} The Jain temple of Appāndār at Tirunaruṅgoṇḍai in the South Arcot District also received the benefactions of Rājarāja I, and Kundavai seems to have caused a tank to be dug in the same place.\textsuperscript{63}

Rājendra figures as the donor of the above temple\textsuperscript{64} and the one at Tirumalai. A Virakeralaperumpalli existed at Salukki in the North Arcot District during his time.\textsuperscript{65}

\textsuperscript{56} \textit{Ibid.}, 1934-35, No. 84; Part II, para. 11.
\textsuperscript{57} \textit{Ibid.}, 1937-38, Nos. 446, 448.
\textsuperscript{58} \textit{Ibid.}, 1916, No. 277.
\textsuperscript{60} No. 8 of 1919.
\textsuperscript{61} \textit{SIH}, Vol. I, Nos. 67-68.
\textsuperscript{63} No. 385 of 1902.
\textsuperscript{64} No. 300 of 1939-40.
\textsuperscript{65} No. 474 of 1920.
The Cōlas were great patrons of the Jain temple at Karanḍai or Tiruppārambūr in the North Arcot District. This temple is called Virarājendrapperumpalli after the Cōla king Virarājendra and consists of two shrines, one for Kunthunātha and the other for Vardhamāna, the latter being called Tirukkāṭāmpalli Ālvār in the inscriptions.66 Virarājendra, Kulottuṅga I and Rājarāja III made liberal endowments to this temple.67

Kulottuṅga I and his son Vikramacōla also patronised the Jain temple of Tirupparuttikungam. Ārambhanandi, an eminent Jain teacher, belonged to this centre, which had a Rṣi-samudāya to manage the temple affairs.68 Renovations and additions to the Vardhamāna temple were made in the time of Kulottuṅga III, in the form of shrines and mandapas.69 Eminent teachers like Candrakīrtti, 'the ācārya of Kōṭṭaiyūr', and his disciple Anantavirya Vāmana added to the importance and prestige of this Trikūta-basti or three-shrined temple under the Cōlas.70

The Cōlas were also the greatest patrons of the temple and māṭha at Cittāmūr in the South Arcot District, which continues to be the headquarters of the Pontiff of the Tamil Jains even today. Kāṭāmpalli or Tiruvūṟāmpalli, as this temple is known in the Cōla inscriptions, became an important centre for the worship of Pārśvanātha.71

In the 12th century, the Śāmbhuvarāya feudatories of Rājarāja II patronised the Jain temple called Iraṇikulasundara-pperumpalli at Perumandūr in the South Arcot District.72 One of them, by name Viravira, appears to have been the builder of a Jain temple named after him as Viravira Jīnālaya.

66 No. 135 of 1939-40.
67 Nos. 129, 132, 135 and 141 of 1939-40.
68 Nos. 381-382 of 1928-29.
69 T. N. Ramachandran, op. cit., pp. 25-26, 34.
72 Ibid., Nos. 846, 848.
at Pândji in the North Arcot District.\textsuperscript{73} It is now known as the Ponninâtha temple. Under a later Sâmbhuvarâya chieftain of the middle of the 14th century, a private individual provided for a metal image of the deity to be made at Tirumalai.\textsuperscript{74}

The Cedirâyas and Kâdavârâyas, feudatories under the Côjas in the 12th-13th centuries, made liberal endowments to the Appândar temple at Tiruarûngondu. This temple, which contains two shrines dedicated to Candraprabha and Pârsvanâtha, is called Nârpateppâyirappurumpallî probably after a merchant corporation of the Côja period.\textsuperscript{75}

Kopperuûjînga, the greatest of the Kâdavârâya rulers, seems to have been a great patron of the Jain faith in the 13th century A.D. His inscriptions show that he endowed several Jain institutions in Tondaimândalam with gifts. Tirupparuttikungam received his benefactions in the form of additions to the temple, apart from other grants.\textsuperscript{76} The Kunthinâtha temple at Karanâdu was the recipient of his largesses.\textsuperscript{77} This ‘Pallavar Kôn’ or ‘Alagiya Pallavar’ was also the patron of the Vardhamâna temple at Tirakkol in the North Arcot District.\textsuperscript{78}

Under the Pândyas. The Pândyas of the second empire did not withhold their patronage from the Jain institutions of Tondaimândalam. Two centres in the North Arcot District received their endowments. The temple of Nâyanâr Anîyâdaliggerîî (Bâhubali ?) at Ēdalavadi was one of the recipients of land grants made about 1271 A.D. under Tribhuvanacakravartî Kulaśekharadeva (I).\textsuperscript{79} Similarly, the temple of

---

\textsuperscript{73} \textit{Ibid.}, No. 62.
\textsuperscript{74} \textit{Ibid.}, Vol. I, No. 70.
\textsuperscript{75} Nos. 299, 301, 310-11, 313, 317 and 319 of 1939-40; \textit{SIH}, Vol. VII, No. 1311.
\textsuperscript{77} Nos. 140, 142 and 143 of 1939-40.
\textsuperscript{79} \textit{A. R. Ep.}, 1939-40 to 1942-43, Part II, para. 53.
"Adinātha at Ponnūr received endowments in the time of Māruvarman Vikramapāṇḍya about 1289 A.D."  

Under the Gaṅgas and Rāstrakūṭas. The Gaṅgas, whose kingdom was founded probably with the help of the Jains, also find mention in some important records of Tondaimandalam. Attimalla (Hastimalla) alias Kannaradeva Prthvīgaṅgaraiyaṇ, a Gaṅga ruler, set up an image of Rṣabhadeva and provided for its offerings by making a gift of the village of Korrāmaṅgalam. This tenth century inscription is engraved on a pillar, which originally belonged to a Jain temple, but is now found built into the Draupadī temple at Padiyam-paṭṭu in the North Arcot District.

Under Rājamalla, another Gaṅga ruler of the 10th century, Vallimalai in the North Arcot District was an important Jain centre. The local hill contains sculptures of four Jain preceptors, two of which were caused to be made by one Ajjaṇandī who was perhaps the greatest of the Jain teachers living in the 9th and 10th centuries A.D. and was famous all over Tamilnadu as evidenced by inscriptions mentioning him at places like Anaimalai, Aivarmalai, Uttamapāḷaiyam, Karunāḷakkudi and Koṅgar Puliyāṅgulaṅgam in the Madurai District and Eruvāḍi in the Tirunelveli District.

An inscription of a later period, also from Vallimalai mentions Bhavanandi who may be identified with the author of the Namul, a work on Tamil Grammar. He is believed to have been patronised by a Gaṅga ruler named Amarabharaṇaṇ Śiyagaṅgaṇ who was a contemporary of the Chola king Kulottuṅga III (12th-13th century A.D.).

Under Kṛṣṇa III, the Rāstrakūṭa ruler of the 10th century, a gift of lamp was made at Tirumalai by a servant of

80 No. 415 of 1928-29.
82 No. 140 of 1941-42.
84 Nos. 692 and 729 of 1905; No. 54 of 1910; No. 562 of 1911.
Gaṅgamādevi, the queen of that monarch.\textsuperscript{86} Gaṅgamādevi was evidently a Gaṅga princess, and it is well known that the Gaṅgas were ardent followers of the Jain faith. The prestige and importance of Tirumalai as a Jain settlement from very early times are established by the fact that the religious heads of Śrāvaṇa Belgoḷa were often chosen from the Jains of Tirumalai.\textsuperscript{87}

Ārmāmalai in the North Arcot District has a Jain cave with some mutilated paintings assignable to the Rāstrakūṭas of the 10th century A.D.

Under the Vijayanagar Kings. From the 14th century onwards, the Jain centres of Tamilnadu shared with the other institutions the generous endowments of the enlightened rulers of Vijayanagar. At Tirupparuttikūngam, Īrugappa, a Vijayanagar general, built the Saṅgīta-maṇḍapa in the Vardhamāna temple about 1387 A.D. at the instance of his spiritual guru Puṇḍrasena.\textsuperscript{88} He granted the village of Mahendramāṅgalam to the god Trailokayānātha (Vardhamāna) for the merit of prince Bukkarāya, son of Harihara II.\textsuperscript{89} Mallīśena Vāmana and his disciple Puṇḍrasena were two important preceptors of this period. The former was the author of several works in Sanskrit and Tamil and won the title Ēbhāyabhāṣāṅkavacakravartin for his learning.\textsuperscript{90} Puṇḍrasena, who is called a Munipuṅgava and Paravādimala, constructed the gopura of the temple.\textsuperscript{91} Paintings representing the life stories of the Tirthaṅkaras and their attendant deities were executed in the maṇḍapas of this temple during the Vijayanagar and subsequent periods.

Under Bukkarāya, the Jains made a representation to the king against some injustices alleged to have been done to them.

\textsuperscript{86} No. 65 of 1907.
\textsuperscript{87} T. A. Gopinatha Rao, 'Jaina Centres in South India', \textit{Malabar Quarterly Review}, IV.
\textsuperscript{88} No. 42 of 1890 ; T. N. Ramachandran, \textit{op. cit.}, p. 57.
\textsuperscript{89} No. 41 of 1890 ; \textit{Ep. Ind.}, Vol. VII, p. 115.
\textsuperscript{90} Nos. 98 and 100 of 1923 ; T. N. Ramachandran, \textit{op. cit.}, p. 24.
\textsuperscript{91} No. 98 of 1923.
by the Vaiṣṇavas. The emperor brought about a compromise between the Jains and Vaiṣṇavas by his famous declaration that the two sects must not be viewed as different and that the Vaiṣṇavas should protect the Jain sect. This proclamation involved the Jains and Śrīvaiṣṇavas of the Tamil country.\textsuperscript{92}

In the time of Devarāya II, a Jain temple was erected for Rṣabhanātha in Kuṇrāi or Kuṇṇattūr in the North Arcot District in Śaka 1363 (1441 A.D.).\textsuperscript{93} The Vardhamāna temple at Tācāmbādi in the same District was also constructed during his period.\textsuperscript{94}

Sāluva Narasimha appears to have patronised the Jain temple of Ādinātha at Poḷṇūr in the North Arcot District.\textsuperscript{95} This village was a centre of the Jvālamālinī cult popularised by one Helācārya who probably belonged to the period before 900 A.D.\textsuperscript{96}

Kṣṇadevarāya, the greatest of the Vijayanagar rulers, made endowments to the Trailokyanātha temple at Jina-Kānći.\textsuperscript{97} The same monarch patronised the Virarājendrapperumpalli at Kāranḍai.\textsuperscript{98}

The Appāṇḍar temple at Tirunaṅṅaṅgondai was the recipient of endowments under the Vijayanagar rulers in the 14th and 15th centuries A.D.\textsuperscript{99} Guṇabhadra, a Jain sage, who established the Virasaṅgha (Virasaṅghapratisṭhācārya) lived at this centre about the 14th century A.D. He is said to be the guru of Maṇḍalapuruṣa, the famous lexicographer (author of the Cudāmaninigaṇḍu), who was a native of Perumaṇḍur and flourished in the time of Kṣṇadevarāya.\textsuperscript{100}

Acuṭarāya ordered the remittance of taxes for offerings and worship in the Jain temple of Vijaya-nāyakar at Jambai

\textsuperscript{93} No. 144 of 1941-42.
\textsuperscript{94} A. R. Ep., 1941-42, No 155.
\textsuperscript{95} No. 417 of 1928-29.
\textsuperscript{96} A. R. Ep., 1928-29, Part II, para. 74.
\textsuperscript{98} No. 144 of 1939-40.
\textsuperscript{99} No. 304 of 1939-40.
near Pallikkandal in the South Arcot District. The same king also made liberal endowments to the Jain temple called Tiruvakkiāṇḍa-Tambirānār at Velūr at the request of his subordinate Bomma-nāyaka.

Other Centres. There are a few more important centres in the Chingleput District, where Jain inscriptions, sculptures and temples exist. In Śivākkam, there was a Jain temple called Śrikaraṇapperumpaḷḷi in the 9th and 10th centuries A.D. Uttarāmarūr Perunagar, Āṟpākkam, Āṟyaperumpākkam, Viṣār and Kuṇṇattūr also possess Jain vestiges. Māgaral has a dilapidated temple dedicated to Āḍinātha. Tradition attributes the decline of Jainism in this region to Tirujñāna-sambandar whose activities were directed mainly against the Jains of Madurai.

Kiṟappākkam in the same district formerly contained a Jain temple known as Deśavallabha-jinālaya, which was constructed about in the 9th century by one Amaramudālguru of the Yāpaniya-saṅgha and Kumiligāṇa. The inscription which records this event proves beyond doubt that the Yāpaniyas existed in the Tamil country also and that the sect was not confined to Kārnāṭaka, as held by P. B. Desai.

Sēdāṟampāṭṭu in the North Arcot District contains rock-beds with a triple umbrella carved on one of them on a hill locally called Pāṇicarpāṇdvartippa. Since there are no inscriptions or Jain sculptures here, its date cannot be determined.

Cakramallūr and Brahmadeśam in the North Arcot District and Koliyanūr and Śiṅganikkūppam in the South

101 No. 449 of 1937-38; Part II, paras. 22 and 70.
102 Nos. 122-23 of 1919.
103 No. 64 of 1923.
105 No. 22 of 1934-35.
108 Nos. 25, 33, 37 and 41 of 1940-41.
109 No. 221 of 1915.
110 SH, Vol. IV, No. 64; Vol. VI, No. 65.
Arcot District are the other important Jain centres, most of which flourished during the Cōla period.

Pudukkalani near Āmūr in the South Arcot District contains a boulder with Jain sculptures, one of which represents Pārśvanātha and is assignable to the 9th century A.D. 111

At Pūlal near Madras there is a temple for Ṛṣabhadeva, which probably owes its origin to the Cōlas. The temple now goes by the name of Emmānkoyil. According to one of the Mackenzie manuscripts, there was a Jain temple dedicated to Neminātha at Vāmanāthapura (Mylapore, Madras), which fell into ruins due to sea erosion. However, the image of Neminātha is said to have been removed to Cittāmūr for safety. 112

---

VARĀHAMIHIRA AND BHADRAΒĀHU

Ajay Mitra Shastri, Nagpur University

Varāhamihira is justly reckoned as a doyen of the astronomers and astrologers of ancient India. He surpassed all other fellow-workers in the field by composing standard works, both copious and abridged, on all the three branches of Jyotiṣa, viz., (i) tantra (mathematical astronomy), (ii) horā (horoscopy), and (iii) sākuḥ or samhitā (natural astrology). Several of his writings have come down to us.¹ Unfortunately we possess very meagre information regarding his life and times. From what he himself tells us we know that he was the son as well as a pupil of one Ādityadāsa and a resident of Avanti and obtained a boon from the Sun-god at a place called Kāpitthaka.² His Pañcasiḍhāntikā (I.8) specifies the Śaka year 427 (505 A.D.) which evidently has reference to the date of the composition of the work. We also have some evidence to indicate that he was a Sun-worshipping Maga Brāhmaṇa. His son Pṛthuyāśas was also an astrologer and his work, Satpaṇcāṣikā, is still extant.³

Some late Jain writers narrate stories which seek to establish some relationship between Varāhamihira and Bhadrabāhu. Thus, the Prabandhacintāmaṇi tells us that in the city of Pāṭaliputra, there lived a Brāhmaṇa boy named Varāha who was, ever since his birth, devoted to the study of astrology. But because of poverty he had to subsist by tending

¹ These include the Brhatasamhitā, Brhajjātaka, Laghujaṭaka, Yogayātrā, Tikaṇṭakayātrā, Brhadyātrā, Pañcasiddhāntikā and Vivākapaṭala. Of these, the Brhadyātrā and Vivākapaṭala still remain unpublished. For a collection of the available fragments of the Samāsamhitā, vide my paper in Bhār. Vid., Vol. XXIII, pp. 23-39.

² Brhajjātaka, XXVIII.9.

³ For a full discussion of Varāhamihira’s life, date and works, see A. M. Shastri, India as seen in the Brhatasamhitā of Varāhamihira, Delhi, 1969, Ch. I.
cattle. Once he drew a horoscope (lagna) on the surface of a rock, but forgot to efface it before returning home in the evening. On remembering it he went back to the spot in the night only to find a lion sitting over it; but he effaced the drawing fearlessly by putting his hand under the lion's belly. The lion gave up his animal mask and appeared as the Sun-god and told him to ask a boon. Varāha requested him to show him the entire circle of stars and planets whereupon the god had him seated in his transport and enabled him to examine closely the movements of all the heavenly bodies. When he returned after a year he became famous as Varāhamihira in allusion to the favour of the Sun-god (Mihira), was patronised by king Nanda and composed a treatise on astrology called Vārāhi Samhitā. Once when a son was born to him, he closely examined the moment and from his intimate personal knowledge of the planets prophesied a hundred-year life for the newborn babe. All but his younger full-brother, the Jain teacher Bhadrabāhu, came to him with presents and participated in the festivities marking the occasion. Varāha complained to the Jain minister Śakaṭāla about it. On being told about it, Bhadrabāhu said that he had not attended the function as, according to his calculation, the child would meet death from a cat on the 20th day. And notwithstanding all the efforts to prevent the calamity the prediction came out true, and the child expired in the night as an iron chain bearing an engraved figure of a cat fell on his head. Varāhamihira was utterly disappointed and was about to consign all the books to fire when Bhadrabāhu came to console him and prevented him from doing so. But being envious of Bhadrabāhu, Varāhamihira took recourse to black magic and caused trouble to some and death to some others of his (Bhadrabāhu's) lay followers whereupon Bhadrabāhu composed a new hymn (stotra) called Uvasaggaharapāsa with the object of averting these disturbances.⁴

The same episode, with some minor differences and elaboration of details, is related by Rājaśekharasūrī in his

Prabandhakośa, also known as Caturvimsatiprabandha. It may be summarised as follows.

Two poor but intelligent Brāhmaṇa boys named Bhadrabāhu and Varāha lived at Pratiṣṭhānapura in Dakṣināpatha. Once the Jain patriarch Yaśobhadra, who knew the fourteen Pūrvas, came over there. Bhadrabāhu and Varāha heard his sermon and became Jain monks. Bhadrabāhu acquired the knowledge of the fourteen Pūrvas and possessed thirty-six qualities. He attained great fame as the composer of the nīryuktis (commentaries) on the ten canonical works, to wit, Daśavaṅkālikasūtra, Uttarādhyayanasūtra, Daśāṣrutaskandha, Kalpasūtra, Vyavahārasūtra, Āvaśyakasūtra, Sūryaprajñapti, Sūtrakṛta, Ācārāngasūtra and Śībhāṣita, and also composed a work called Bhadrabāhavi Samhitā. After the passing away of Yaśobhadrasūri, both Bhadrabāhu and Sambhūtivijaya (who also possessed the knowledge of the fourteen Pūrvas) lived amicably and wandered independently. Varāha, who too was a scholar, wanted his brother Bhadrabāhu to confer on him the status of sūrī. Bhadrabāhu declined the request as Varāha, though learned, was puffed up with pride. Thereupon Varāha gave up the vow and again lived the life of a Brāhmaṇa. On the basis of his study of the sciences when he was a Jain monk, he composed a number of new works including the Vārahasamhitā and circulated the rumour of his acquisition of the knowledge of astrology by the favour of the Sun-god as narrated in the above story from the Prabandhacintāmani and thereby attained great celebrity. Pleased with his learning, Śatrujit, king of Pratiṣṭhānapura, appointed him his priest. Varāha hurled abuses on the Śvetāmbaras who were upset and sent for Bhadrabāhu. In the mean time, Varāhamihira was blessed with a son for whom he predicted a full 100 years' life, and the occasion was fittingly celebrated. Varāhamihira complained that Bhadrabāhu, although he was his full-brother, did not participate in the festivities. On hearing it, Bhadrabāhu explained away his action by predicting the child’s death from a cat on the seventh day. The incident took place and Bhadrabāhu consoled his brother
exactly as narrated in the Prabandhacintāmaṇi. But a Jain layman, reminded of the earlier insult of his faith by Varāhamihira, condemned the latter in the harshest possible words. On knowing the whole episode and being introduced to Bhadrabāhu, the king, who had come to console Varāhamihira, embraced Jainism. Thereupon Varāhamihira began to hate Jainism and caused a lot of troubles to the Jain laity. To avert this calamity Bhadrabāhu compiled from earlier works a prayer entitled Uvasaggaharapāsa comprising five stanzas. The story ends with the statement that Bhadrabāhu’s successor, Sthūlabhadra, who also had the knowledge of the fourteen Pūrvas, destroyed other faiths.  

This story with minor changes is narrated in some other works also. Thus, in the Sukhabodhini commentary on the Kalpasūtra, the same anecdote as found in the Prabandhacintāmaṇi is related with the only difference that here the episode centres round the son of Varāhamihira’s royal patron, and not round Varāhamihira’s own son.  

A comparative analysis will reveal that there are some minor differences between the versions of the story as found in the Prabandhacintāmaṇi and the Prabandhakoṣa. In the former, the venue of the episode is located at Pāṭliputra, while the latter places it at Pratiṣṭhāna. While the former makes out the episode as occurring during the reign of king Nanda, the latter gives the name of the king as Śatrujit. Merutunga does not mention, like Rājaśekharasūrī, the anecdote of Varāhamihira’s first becoming a Jain ascetic and then reverting to the life of a Brāhmaṇa out of jealousy of his brother Bhadrabāhu and leaves the impression that, while Bhadrabāhu became a Jain monk, Varāhamihira throughout led the life of a Brāhmaṇa astrologer. Again, whereas the Prabandhakoṣa speaks of Bhadrabāhu as a pupil of Yasobhadra, a contemporary of Sambhūtivijaya, and as the teacher of

5 Prabandhakoṣa, ed. Jinavijaya Muni, Singhī Jaina Series, No. 6, Santiniketan, 1933, Prabandha I (Bhadrabāhu-Varāha-prabandha), pp. 2-4.
Sthulabhadra, no such statement is found in the Prabandhacintāmani. Likewise, while the Prabandhakośa describes Yāsobhadra, Bhadrabāhu, Sambhūtivijaya and Sthulabhadra as possessing the knowledge of the fourteen Pūrvas (caturdāśa-pūrvin), the Prabandhacintāmani does not make any such explicit statement. And lastly, the death of Varāhamihira’s son according to Bhadrabāhu’s prediction took place on the 20th day according to the Prabandhacintāmani, while this event is placed on the 7th day by the other work which further adds that, as a result of this incident, Varāhamihira’s royal patron got himself converted to Jainism. Obviously the Prabandhakośa version, although composed only forty-four years after the Prabandhacintāmani, marks a great elaboration of the original story and overlays the rivalry between Varāhamihira and Bhadrabāhu in particular and between Jainism and Brāhmaṇical Hinduism in general. But fundamentally, there is no difference between these versions. By placing the incident during the reign of king Nanda, Merutuṅga also identifies Bhadrabāhu, the central figure of his story, with the homonymous caturdāśa-pūrvin Jain patriarch.

If any historical value were to be attached to the above story, Varāhamihira will have to be regarded as a contemporary, nay even brother, of Bhadrabāhu who, according to the Jain tradition, was the last of the śrutakevalins and flourished a few centuries before Christ.

There is no unanimity among the Jains about the date of the śrutakevalin Bhadrabāhu. The Digambara tradition as incorporated in the Tiloyapaññatti, Dhavalā, Jayadhavalā and other works unanimously gives 162 years as the total period of the pontificate of the three kevalins and five śrutakevalins after Mahāvira’s nirvāṇa. According to the Śvetāmbara tradition

7 The Prabandhacintāmani, as stated in its colophon (p. 125), was completed in Vikrama 1361 expired corresponding to 1306 A.D., while Rājaśekharasūri finished his Prabandhakośa in Vikrama 1405 (p. 131) or 1349 A.D.

8 For a full discussion, see Kailash Chandra Sastri, Jaina Sāhitya kā Hīhāsa : Pūrvapitākā, Varanasi, pp. 337-39.
recorded in Hemacandra’s *Pariśīṣṭaparvan* and other works, on the other hand, Bhadrabāhu passed away when 170 years had elapsed since Mahāvira’s *nirvāṇa*.⁹ Although some Jain works place the end of the rule of the Nanda dynasty, which coincided with the close of the pontificate of Sthūlabhadra, 215 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira and thereby make Bhadrabāhu flourish in the Nanda period which is said to have lasted for 155 years, the tradition recorded by Hemacandra which places Candragupta Maurya’s accession 155 years after Mahāvira’s death and the evidence of some Jain writers¹⁰ and inscriptions from Mysore¹¹ which make out a case for the contemporaneity of Bhadrabāhu and Candragupta Maurya appear more trustworthy.¹² And what is most pertinent in the present context is, while the Digambara and Śvetāmbara traditions considerably differ between themselves as regards the order and names of the spiritual successors of Mahāvira and the exact length of the period covered by their pontificate,¹³ the date they assign to the *ṣrutakevalin* Bhadrabāhu falls in the fourth century B.C. Thus he lived over eight centuries before Varāhamihira who, as we have seen above, can be definitely assigned to the sixth century A.D. on the basis of the internal evidence of his own writings.¹⁴

In view of the above chronological position of the *caturdaśa-purvin* Bhadrabāhu and Varāhamihira, the tradition recorded by Merutunga and Rājaśekherasūri which represents

---


¹⁴ For a detailed discussion of Varāhamihira’s date, see A. M. Shastri, *op. cit.*, pp. 4-18.
them as contemporaries must be set aside. It must be pointed out in this connection that, while there may be a substratum of truth in some of the near contemporary episodes related by these two Jain writers of the fourteenth century A.D., they evince an utter lack of historical sense that regards the earlier period. Not to speak of very recent times, the stories narrated by Merutunga about the death of Mahāvīra, is described as the pupil of the king of Malwa, who flourished in the eleventh century A.D., are an amalgum of incredible legends and suffer from anachronism. To cite only a few examples, he would have us believe that the celebrated poets Bāna and Mayūra, who are known to have lived in the first half of the seventh century A.D. and enjoyed the patronage of the Pusyabhūti king Harṣavardhana, actually adorned the court of Bhoja of Malwa.; Likewise, he relates an amusing story about the friendship of the poet Māgha, who is known from independent grounds to have flourished in the latter half of the same century, and king Bhoja. Then again he speaks of a place called Kalyāṇa-kāṭaka as the capital town (rājadhāni-nagara) of the country of Kānyakubja which is said to have comprised thirty-six lakhs of villages. This statement is very curious inasmuch as Kānyakubja itself enjoyed the status of the imperial capital first of the Maukharis and Harṣavardhana and then of the Āyudhas and the imperial Pratihāras and no town named Kalyāṇa-kāṭaka is known from any other source to have existed in the proximity of Kanauj. Similar is the case with the Prabandhakośa. It refers to king Śatavāhana as the founder of an era (samvatsara), evidently the so-called Śālivāhana-Śaka which actually owes its origin to the Śakas after whom it was known for a long time. Then again it attributes the

15 The stories concerning the Caulukyas come under this category.
16 Prabandhacintāmaṇi, Prakāśa 2, pp. 44-45.
17 Ibid., Prakāśa 2, pp. 34-36.
18 Ibid., Prakāśa 1, p. 11.
19 Prabandha 15, p. 68.
20 G. H. Olha, Bharatiya Prāṇaīya Lipimālā (Delhi, Vikrama 2016), pp. 170-73; D. C. Sircar, Indian Epigraphy (Delhi, 1965), pp. 258-67. [The era is often regarded as the reckoning of Kaniska I of the Kuśāṇa clan. —Ed.]
Sārasvatavyākarana to the same king whereas a more popular tradition assigns it to Śrīvaravarman. Likewise, it mentions Meghacandra as the son and successor of Jayantacandra (i.e., Jayacandra) who himself is represented as the son of Govindacandra, king of Vārānasī, 215 years after the Gāhadavāla ruler of that name. This is the most flagrant distortion of near contemporary history, for we learn from numerous Gāhadavāla inscriptions that after Govindacandra came his son Vijayacandra and after the latter his son Jayacandra who was followed by his son Hariścandra. These examples picked up at random would suffice to show that even as regards near contemporary events no great historical value attaches to the statements of these two authors, not to speak of episodes said to have taken place several centuries before their own time. It would, therefore, not be surprising if the story concerning Bhadrabāhu and Vārāhamihira is totally unhistorical and baseless.

It is, however, pertinent to note in this connection that the available evidence indicates the existence of more than one Jain teacher named Bhadrabāhu who were separated from one another by a few centuries. The śruta kevalin Bhadrabāhu, who, as shown above, flourished in the second century after the passing away of the last Jain Tirthaṅkara, may be conveniently referred to as Bhadrabāhu I. As he lived prior to the division of the Jain church between the Śvetāmbara and Digambara sects, he was honoured by the followers of both the sects and is consequently mentioned in the literary traditions of both of them. As the later teachers of this name belonged only to one or the other of the two main sects, they are referred to in the literary works emanating only from the followers of the concerned sect. Thus, the Digambara

---

21 Prabandhakosa, Prabandha 15, p. 72.
22 Ibid., Prabandha 11, p. 54.
23 The Struggle for Empire, ed. R. C. Majumdar and A. D. Pusalker, (Bombay, 1966), pp. 54-55.
24 This reminds one of the Buddhist councils, only the first two of which are known to the undivided Buddhist church whereas the subsequent ones, being of sectarian nature, are mentioned only in the works of the respective sects.
Paṭṭāvalis belonging to the Nandi-saṅgha and the Sarasvatī-gaccha mention two Bhadrabāhus, the first of whom was the last śrutakēvalin and is said to have been the disciple of the fourth śrutakevalin, Govardhana, and expired 162 years after Mahāvīra’s nirvāṇa. The second Bhadrabāhu is spoken of as having flourished 492 years after the death of Mahāvīra, that is, in Vikrama 22 or 35 B.C. and is described as the pupil of Yaśobhadra. His pontificate is said to have covered twenty-three years, i.e., 35-12 B.C. The Paṭṭāvali of the Nandi Āmnāya of the Sarasvatī-gaccha begins with him. It must be pointed out in this connection that the famous Digambara author Kundakunda describes himself in his Chappāhuḍa (Satprābhṛta) as a pupil of Bhadrabāhu who is generally identified with the second teacher of this name known to the Digambara tradition. There is, however, a serious difficulty in accepting this identification. This Bhadrabāhu is spoken of as well-versed in the twelve Angas and fourteen Pūrvas, a description applicable only to the first Bhadrabāhu. It is also noteworthy that Kundakunda refers to Bhadrabāhu as a gamaya-guru (gamaka-guru) or traditional teacher, and not as an ordinary teacher. Kundakunda had, thus, nothing to do with Bhadrabāhu II.

25 As stated above, the Śvetāmbaras place his death 170 years after Mahāvīra’s passing away.

26 H. Jacobi, The Kalpasūtra of Bhadrabāhu, intro., pp. 10ff. ; Ind. Ant., Vol. II, p. 245 ; Vol. XXI, pp. 57ff. This Bhadrabāhu is mentioned only in the Paṭṭāvalis, other texts remaining reticent about him. According to some scholars, the episode of the migration of the Jain community to South India recorded in literature and some late inscriptions from Mysore was connected with Bhadrabāhu II. See J. F. Fleet in Ind. Ant., Vol. XII, pp. 156ff. ; Kailash Chandra Shastri, op. cit., pp. 350-351. The suggestion is, however, not satisfactory.

27 Satprābhṛta (by Surajbhan Vakil, Varanasi, 1910), Bodha-pāda, verse 62.


29 Bārasya-Aṅgai-viśyānaḥ cauddasa-Puvranga-viula-vittharayaḥ/
Suyanami Bhaddabāhu gamaya-guru bhayavao jeyau||
As shown above, a late Śvetāmbara tradition recorded by authors of the fourteenth and subsequent centuries of the Christian era mentions a certain Bhadrabāhu who is spoken of as a brother and rival of the astronomer-astrologer Varāhamihira.\(^{30}\) Although he is represented as a caturdaśa-pūrvin, his alleged contemporaneity with Varāhamihira, whose date is known from his own works, seems to point to the existence of yet another Bhadrabāhu who lived in the sixth century A.D. We may call him Bhadrabāhu III. This Bhadrabāhu is credited with the authorship of a number of works including niryukti\(^s\) on ten works of the Jain canon, an astrological treatise entitled Bhāḍdrabhāvī Sāmhitā and a stotra consisting of five verses called Uvasaggaharapās. It is pertinent to note here that much earlier unanimous Śvetāmbara tradition recorded in the niryukis,\(^{31}\) bhāṣyās\(^{32}\) and cūrnis\(^{33}\) of the Jain canon attributes the authorship of the Cheda-sūtras\(^{34}\) to the caturdaśa-pūrva-dhara Bhadrabāhu.

A critical analysis of the above data would reveal that, from fairly early times, some confusion prevailed about the personages bearing the name Bhadrabāhu and that the activities of one Bhadrabāhu were often attributed to another bearer of this name. Thus, while both the Digambara and Śvetāmbara...

---

30 Prabandhaścintamani, Prakāsa 5, pp 118-19; Prabandhakosa, Prabandha 1, pp. 2-4.

31 The niryuki on the Daśāsrutaskandhasūtra mentions Bhadrabāhu as the author of the Daśāsrutaskandha, Kalpa and Vyavahāra. For the text of the verse, see Brhat-Kalpasūtra with the niryuki, a bhāṣya by Saṅghadasagami Ksamaśramana and a commentary by Malayagiri, edited by Muni Caturvijaya and Muni Puṇyaśvijaya, Vol. VI (Bhavnagar, 1942), Gujarati intro., p. 1.

32 The author of the Pañcakalpamahabhāṣya also refers to Bhadrabāhu as the composer of the Daśa, Kalpa and Vyavahāra and repeatedly calls him suttakāra. For the original text, cf. ibid., p. 2.

33 The chūrni on the Pañcakalpabhāṣya gives Bhadrabāhu the credit of composing the Ācāraprakalpa or Niṣīthasūtra, Daśā, Kalpa and Vyavahāra. For the text, see ibid., p. 3.

34 The Daśāsrutaskandha, Kalpa, Vyavahāra, Niṣītha, Mahāniṣītha and Pañcakalpa are known as Cheda-sūtras.
bara traditions are unanimous in representing Bhadrabāhu of the fourth century B.C. as the possessor of the knowledge of the twelve Āṅgas and fourteen Pūrvas, the Digambara Pāṭāvalis alone clearly distinguish him from Bhadrabāhu II who was separated from the former by an interval of about three centuries. Again, the Digambaras do not give to either of these Bhadrabāhus the credit of composing either the niryuktis or the Bhādrabāhavi Samhitā. On the other hand, the Śvetāmbaras clearly mention only one Bhadrabāhu, the śrutakevalin who is said to have passed away 170 years after Mahāvira's nirvāṇa. But while the earlier tradition speaks of him as the author of the Cheda-sūtras only, some late writers credit him with the authorship of the niryuktis, the Bhādrabāhavi Samhitā and the Uvasaggharapāsa also. The earliest writer to represent him as the author of the niryuktis is Sīlāṅka who lived in the eighth century A.D. and speaks of him both as niryuktikāra and as caturdāsa-pūrva-dhara in one and the same breath. The same belief is re-iterated by some later writers like Śāntisūri, Dronacārya, Maladhāri-Hemacandra, Malayagiri and Kṣemakirti. But they do not utter a single word about Bhadrabāhu's mastery over astrology. It was left to some late authors of the fourteenth and following centuries to lay stress on this aspect. Nay, we may even aver that an excessive emphasis on this aspect relegates his other religious and literary activities to the background. Thus was brought into being the fully developed personality of Bhadrabāhu which is an article of faith with the generality of the Śvetāmbaras today. But this belief involves serious anachronism. The overwhelming internal evidence of the niryuktis themselves leaves no room for doubt that they were composed much later than the fourth century B.C. when the śrutakevalin Bhadrabāhu is reputed to have flourished. To cite only a few illustrations.

35 Anuyoga-dāyinah Sudhamasvāmi-prabhātayah yāvad-asya bhagavatā niryakti-kāraśya Bhadrabāhusvāminas = caturdāsa-pūrva-dharasya ācāryyo = 

36 For citations, see ibid., pp. 4-5.
The Āvaśyakaniryukti refers to later Jain ācāryas like Bhadragupta, Ārya Simhagiri, Vajrasvāmin. Tosaliputra, Āryarakṣita, Phalgurakṣita, Ārya Suhastin, etc., by name and alludes to events connected with them. The Uttarādhyayana-sūtra-niryukti not only mentions Sthūlabhadra with respect (he is styled Bhagavat), but also narrates the story of Kālakācārya who is well known in connection with the legends centering round Vikramāditya and thus assignable to the first century B.C. The Pīndaniryukti names Pādalipta and Vajrasvāmin's maternal uncle Samita and relates the ordination of the Tāpasas of Brahmadvīpa and the origin of the Brahmadvīpika-sākhā. And lastly, the Oghaniriyukti represents its author as paying obeisance not only to saints possessing the knowledge of the fourteen Purvas, but also to those versed in ten Purvas and eleven Āṅgas, which can refer only to the post śrutakevalin period and would be anachronistic if the niryuktis were to be regarded as composed by the caturdasa-pūrvin Bhadrabāhu. Not that the commentators of the niryuktis were not aware of these anachronisms; but the pressure of tradition weighed so heavily that they attempted to explain away these anachronistic trends by resorting to some ingenious devices. Thus, Śāntisūri in his gloss on the Uttarādhyayana-sūtra observes that the presence, in the niryuktis, of illustrations alluding to later events should not lead one to suppose that they were composed by some other person, for that illustrious śrutakevalin possessing the knowledge of fourteen Purvas was capable of perceiving anything relating to the past, present and future. Likewise, referring to the obeisance of the

37 Ibid., pp. 5-8.
38 For the original text, see ibid., pp. 7-8. [The Vikramāditya tradition is really much later.—Ed.]
39 Ibid., p. 7.
40 Arahante vamditā cāḍasa-puṇvi sah = eva dasa-puṇvi
Ekkhāras-ānga-suṣṭha-thārae savva-sāhā ya (quoted from loc, cit.)
41 For some other anachronisms, see ibid., pp. 5-14.
42 Na ca keṣaḥcīd = ih = odāharaṇānāṁ niryuktikālab = avāk-kālabhāvītā ity = anya-okaṭavam = āsāṃkāṇyaṁ, sa hi bhagavāṁś = caudasa-puṛva-vit śrutakeval kāla-traya-viṣayaṁ vastu paśyaty = ev = eti katham = anya-okaṭav-āsāṅka iti (ibid., p. 4).
author of the *niryuktis* to those knowing the ten *Pūrvas*, etc., Dropācārya in his commentary on the *Oghanjīryuktī* states that there is no harm in Bhadrabāhu saluting them, for though inferior to him in point of knowledge, they possessed more virtues.\(^{43}\) But such explanations can hardly succeed to bring a modern reader round the traditional view that the *niryuktis* emanate from the *śrutakevalīṇ* Bhadrabāhu. And then the *niryuktī* on the *Daśaśrutaskandha* commences with a salutation to Bhadrabāhu himself, described as the author of the *Daśā*, *Kalpa* and *Vyavahāra*,\(^ {44}\) which should more than suffice to dismiss the belief as a fiction. The only solution which can satisfactorily explain all the relevant facts is that the *niryuktis* were composed by a later Bhadrabāhu who was, as pointed out by Muni Punyavijaya,\(^ {45}\) confused with his *śrutakevalīṇ* predecessor bearing the same name because of the identity of name.

When did this Bhadrabāhu flourish? We have stated above that the Digambaras know of a second Bhadrabāhu who is assigned to the latter half of the first century B.C. The Śvetāmbara tradition, which appears to have no knowledge of a Bhadrabāhu in the first century B.C., mentions another Bhadrabāhu who from his alleged contemporaneity with Varāhamihira seems to have flourished in the sixth century A.D. It should be noted, however, that there is considerable similarity between the details of personages connected in connection with these personages. Thus Pushālakṣaṇas and pupils of Yaśobhadra and their known emphasised. These similarities

\(^{43}\) *Guj-ādhikārya vandanaṃ i
uktaḥ—gūj-āhīre vahdanayaṁ;\n
dhāraṇvād daśa-pūrva-dhar-ādi-ātām

\(^{44}\) *Vamāṇa Bṛhadabāhum\n
Suttaṃ sa karagam—isīṁ

as incidental. We also know that the late Śvetāmbara tradition, which speaks of Bhadrabāhu and Varāhamihira as contemporaries, does not distinguish him from the śrūka-kevalin Bhadrabāhu and is full of many other anachronisms. Thus, in spite of the alleged association with Varāhamihira, we would not be quite unjustified if we conclude that the niryuktikāra and astrologer Bhadrabāhu of the Śvetāmbara authors is probably no other than Bhadrabāhu II of the Digambara tradition.46 But if any value is to be attached to the reported association of Bhadrabāhu with Varāhamihira described by late Śvetāmbara writers, he will have to be regarded as Bhadrabāhu III. Some scholars accord the credit of composing the niryuktis to Bhadrabāhu II47 and others to Bhadrabāhu III.48 Both these suggestions are equally probable. And according as we accept one or the other of these views, the composition of the niryuktis will have to be placed in the first century B.C. or sixth century A.D.

Muni Puvyavijayaji goes a step further and suggests that the same Bhadrabāhu who composed the niryuktis about the sixth century A.D. was also responsible for the composition of the astrological treatise known as Bhādrabāha Svāmīhīta after his own name and the Upasargaharasattra.48 As regards the latter work, we have nothing to say. But it is difficult to accept his suggestion about the authorship of the former

46 It must be remembered in this connection that a late tradition met with in the Jyotirvidāharaṇa makes Varāhamihira one of the nine genos of the court of Vikramādiya who is credited with the institution of the Vikrama era of 57 B.C. In case it is held that Merutunga and Rāja-ekharaṇi followed this tradition which was quite popular in their time, the identification of the two Bhadrabāhūs will have to be regarded as a certainty.


48 id., pp. 15-17. In support of his proficiency in astrology, Punyavijaya invokes attention to some statements with astrological implications found in the niryuktis and to the fact that the Suryaprajñāpīti was one of the texts chosen by Bhadrabāhu for writing his niryuktis.
work, some manuscripts whereof have come down to us and form the basis of the published editions. A cursory examination of the relevant evidence would not be out of context.

In the colophons of its various chapters, the work is variously called Bhadrabāhukanimitta, Bhadrabāhunimitta-śāstra, Bhadrabāhukanāimitta, Bhadrabāhu-viracita-nimittāśāstra, Bhadrabāhu-viracita-Mahāni(or nai)mittāśāstra and Bhadrabāhuvamhītā. Taken at their face value, these names will lead one to the conclusion that it emanates from Bhadrabāhu which is quite in conformity with the late Jain tradition. But this claim is belied by the internal evidence of the work itself. It begins in the Paurānic fashion and we are told that once upon a time when Bhadrabāhu, the possessor of the knowledge of the twelve Āṅgas, was seated on the Pāṇḍugiri hill near Rājagṛha in Magadha during the reign of king Senajit, he was requested by his pupils to impart in brief the knowledge of astrological phenomena for the benefit of kings, lay followers and particularly ascetics. Bhadrabāhu thereupon agreed to explain to them everything both in brief and in detail. This statement is vitiated by some grave anachronisms. It is well known that during the time of Bhadrabāhu, well-versed in the twelve Āṅgas, Candragupta Maurya was the ruler of practically the whole of India including Magadha whereas no ruler of Magadha named Senajit is known from any other source. Then again, Pāṭaliputra, not Rājagṛha, was the

49. A Gujarati translation by Pandit Hiratal Hamsaraj was published from Bombay in Vikrama 1595 and the text was published a few years later by the same Pandit from Jamnagar. The text critically edited from four manuscripts and with an enlightening introduction by Amritlal S. Gopani and a foreword by Muni Jinavijaya was published in the Singhi Jain Series, No. 26, Bombay, 1949. Later, Nemichandra Shastri edited it from two manuscripts with an introduction and Hindi translation (Varanasi, 1959). Gopani's edition contains twenty-six chapters and that of Shastri twenty-seven chapters and an additional chapter called Pariśīptādhyāya. Unless otherwise stated, references in the present paper pertain to Gopani's edition.

50 Bhadrabāhuvamhītā, I.1-20; II.1-2.

51 Unless, of course, he is identified with Sēpiya Bimbisāra. Prasenajit of Kosala is out of question.
capital of Magadha during the reign of Bhadrabāhu’s royal patron, Candragupta Maurya; Rāja-grha had long ceased to occupy this position. Evidently, in his eagerness to give a halo of antiquity to the work, its compiler lost sight of all historical facts. This introductory portion, wherein Bhadrabāhu is styled mahāman and bhagavat, clearly indicates that the work could not have emanated from any Bhadrabāhu, neither the srutakevalin nor any of his later namesakes. This conclusion is also supported by some other considerations. Thus at one place we are told that an intelligent person should decide the prospects of rainfall after hearing the words of Bhadrabāhu (XI.52). At another place it is stated that Bhadrabāhu described the prospects of fluctuation of prices after observing the auspicious and inauspicious yogas of the planets and stars (XXV.50). Then again, the expression ‘these are the words of Bhadrabāhu’ (Bhadrabāhu-vaco yathā) is met with repeatedly throughout the work.52 Secondly, the Chedaśūtras attributable to Bhadrabāhu I and the niruktis and the Uvasaggaharapāsa of a later Bhadrabāhu are all in Prākrit, and it is reasonable to assume that even if any of these Bhadrabāhus really composed a Samhitā it should also have been in the same language, whereas the extant Bhadrabāhu-samhitā is in Sanskrit. Thirdly, Merutuṅga and Rājaśekharasūri represent Bhadrabāhu as a superior rival of Varāhamihira, and we shall not be unjustified in expecting Bhadrabāhu’s Samhitā, intended to compete with his rival Varāhamihira’s Brāhatsamhitā,53 to excel the latter work in point of contents and presentation. The case is, however, just the opposite. The Bhadrabāhusamhitā lacks unity of composition. A majority of chapters begin with a verse stating that the author would delineate such and such a subject.54 No such statement is,

52 Ibid., III.31, 64; VI.17; VII.19; IX.26, 62; X.16, 44; XI.26, 30; XII.37; XIII.74, 100, 178; XIV.54, 136; XV.36, 72, 127, 145, 166, 178; XVIII.24; XX.14; XXIII.28; XXIV.23; XXV.42.

53 Called Varāhi Samhitā in the Prabandhacintāmani and Prabandha-kosa.

54 In some cases, the concluding verse of a chapter mentions the subject dealt with in the following chapter.
however, found at the commencement of some chapters.\textsuperscript{55} In the introductory portion, the author promises to deal with every topic in brief (samāsataḥ) as well as in detail (vyāsataḥ);\textsuperscript{56} but he keeps this promise only in a few cases.\textsuperscript{57} Then, at the beginning of the Svapn-ādhyāya (Ch. XXVI), there is a fresh maṅgal-ācārana\textsuperscript{58} which shows that originally it did not form a part of the work and was added to it in later times, probably because the topic is mentioned in the list of contents given in the opening chapter (I. 17). The same is the case with Ch. XXX called Pariśiṣṭ-ādhyāya.\textsuperscript{58a} The chapters are not arranged in a scientific manner. Thus no intelligible system is adopted in the delineation of planetary movements (graha-cāra) which form the subject matter of Chs. XV-XXIII. The movements of Venus, which receive the most elaborate treatment, claim the first place (Ch. XV) and are followed by those of Saturn (Ch. XVI). One would naturally expect it to be followed by the treatment of the remaining planets from Sun to Jupiter in their fixed serial order. But such is not the case, and an arbitrary order is adopted. After Saturn comes Jupiter (Ch. XVII) to be followed by Mercury, Mars, Rāhu, Ketu, the Sun and the Moon (Chs. XVIII-XXIII). The case is not very different regarding the arrangement of other chapters.\textsuperscript{59} In some cases, part of one topic is dealt with in one chapter while another part of the same subject is reserved for treatment in a stanza of a

\textsuperscript{55} Cf. Chs. III, IX, X, XII, XXII, XXIII, XXV, XXVII.
\textsuperscript{56} Bhadrabāhu-samhitā, II.2.
\textsuperscript{57} Thus, ulkā is described in brief in Ch. II and in detail in Ch. III. This practice is not followed in respect of other topics.
\textsuperscript{58} Namaskṛtya Mahāvṛtam sur-āsura-janair-rutani
Svapn-ādhyāyaṁ pravakṣyāmi ūbhā-āsūbha-samīrītam (XXVI.1)
\textsuperscript{58a} Śrīmad-Vīrā-pīnair nātvā Bhāratiṇī-ca Pūlindinīṁ
śrīvā nimittani vākaye sv-ārmanāḥ kārya-siddhaye (Pariśiṣṭa, v. 2)
\textsuperscript{59} Clouds, rainfall and connected matters are dealt with in four chapters (VI, VIII, X, XII) which are separated from one another by chapters dealing with other topics like twilight (VII), winds (IX) and gandharva-nagara (XI).
subsequent chapter intervened by a large number of verses. To cite only one example, the quantum of the effects of two of the five kinds of ulkā, viz., Tārā and Dhiṣṇya, is described in verse 9 of Ch. II, while that of the three remaining kinds, viz., Aśani, Vidyut and Ulkā, is specified in verse 12 of the following chapter. Then there are numerous repetitions not only of ideas but even of words, sometimes in one and the same chapter. Verse 7 of Chapter XIII is, for instance, repeated once again after an interval of just sixteen verses (XIII. 23).60 Although minor defects of language, metre and grammar are not uncommon in texts dealing with technical subjects like astrology, astronomy, medicine and philosophy, the Bhadrabāhusamihitā is vitiated by these defects in an unprecedentedly serious proportion which may a time hamper a proper understanding of the text.61 As against this, the Brhatsamihitā is distinguished by well-knit chapters arranged scientifically, succinct but self-sufficient delineation of relevant topics, variety of metres skilfully used, clarity of expression, general correctness of language which varies according to the requirements of the topics dealt with, originality and poetic talent, qualities conspicuous by their absence in the work allegedly composed by Bhadrabāhu. The Bhadrabāhusamihitā cannot thus stand comparison with Varāhamihira's work, not to speak of surpassing it which was the avowed purpose of composing it. But this is not all. Many statements of Varāhamihira are repeated in the Bhadrabāhusamihitā, sometimes with the only difference that, while the former employs only a few words, the latter says the same thing in so many words. To mention only a few examples, Ch. XXXIII of the Brhatasamihitā and Chs. II-III of the Bhadrabāhusamihitā deal with ulkā. Varāhamihira defines ulkā and names its five varieties in XXXIII. 1 which is reiterated in so many words in the Bhadrabāhusamihitā, II. 5-6. The quantum of the effects of the five kinds of ulkā is described in a single stanza by Varāhamihira (XXXIII. 3) and the same is repeated by

60 This has reference to Nemichandra Shastri's ed.
61 For some such defects, see Gopani, op. cit., intro., pp. 19-20.
Bhadrabāhu in two verses (II. 9; III. 12) in somewhat similar words. There is a surprising degree of similarity of words and ideas between the two works in many other places. The Bhadrabāhusamhitā, XXVII. 1 is adapted from the Brhatsamhitā, IX. 38, and XXVII. 2-3 of the former are literally the same as IX. 39 and V. 97 of the latter. Then again, verses 183-95 of the Pariśiṣṭ-ādhyāya of the Bhadrabāhusamhitā are borrowed ad verbatim from the Brhatsamhitā, LXX. 1-7, 9-13, 8. We shall, therefore, not be unjustified in concluding that not only is the Bhadrabāhusamhitā inferior to the Vaiṣṇava Samhitā, but is also indebted to it for many ideas and verses and is consequently later than it.

Although the extant Bhadrabāhusamhitā is thus later than the Brhatsamhitā of Varāhamihira, it is not possible to ascertain its date precisely in the present state of insufficient information. In the absence of definite evidence on the point, scholars have naturally offered diverse suggestions. The oldest available manuscript of the text was copied on Tuesday, the 5th of the bright half of Caitra in [Vikrama] Samvat 1504 or in c. 1447 A.D. But Muni Jinavijaya opines that the work is probably a Sanskritised version of Bhadrabāhu's work which was composed in Prakrit and then even the Sanskrit version is at least as old as the 11th or 12th century of the Vikrama era. A.S. Gopani says at one place

61a Cf. Brhatsamhitā, XXXIII.4. 8, and Bhadrabāhusamhitā, II.8-9; Brhatsamhitā, XXXIII.9-10, 12, 15-16, 18-19, and Bhadrabāhusamhitā, III. 5, 9, 16, 18-19. For a detailed comparison between the two works, see Bhadrabāhusamhitā, cd. Gopani, intro., pp. 6-19, 22-32.

62 As pointed out above, Ch. XXVII is found only in Nemichandra Shastri's ed.

63 Nemichandra Shastri's view that the first twenty-five (particularly, fifteen) chapters, were probably composed earlier than Varāhamihira (intro., pp. 55-56) is contradicted by his own statement that the work may have been compiled in the 8th-9th century A.D. (ibid., p. 55). As pointed out by him, the mention of Durga's work on rīgas in the Bhadrabāhusamhitā, Pariśiṣṭ-ādhyāya, verse 10, clearly shows that at least this chapter is later than 1032 A.D. (ibid., p. 54).

64 See the puspika in Gopani's ed., p. 70.

64a Ibid., Jinavijaya's foreword, pp. 3-4.
that the above-mentioned dated manuscript shows that the work cannot be later than the 16th century of Vikrama\textsuperscript{65} while later he avers that it was composed after the 15th century of Vikrama.\textsuperscript{66} It is difficult to accept either of these views. While we need not deny that Bhadrabāhu did really compose a work on astrology, the internal evidence of the extant work, discussed above, clearly proves that it is neither based on nor is a Sanskrit version of Bhadrabāhu’s work. So also the 11th-12th century date suggested by Jinavijayaji cannot be regarded as a pure surmise. The dated manuscript indicates that the work must have been in existence for some time prior to the date of its copying, Vikrama 1504. This rules out Gopani’s suggestion that it came into existence after the 15th century of Vikrama. It is not impossible that the episode of Bhadrabāhu and Varāhamihira found in the Prabandhacintāmaṇi and Prabandhakoṣa has an important bearing on the question. Although the former work is fully aware of Bhadrabāhu’s mastery over astrology, it does not contain any allusion to the Bhadrabāhusamhitā which is first mentioned in the latter work. There is, of course, no reason to doubt that the Bhadrabāhavi Samhitā known to Rājaśekharasūri was the same as the extant Bhadrabāhusamhitā. Can we, on this basis, conclude that the available Bhadrabāhusamhitā came into existence sometime during the gap between the dates of these two works, i.e., between Vikrama 1361 and 1405?

It will be clear from the foregoing discussion that the work now known as Bhadrabāhusamhitā has nothing to do with any of the Bhadrabāhus and is quite a recent compilation, and an unintelligent one at that, dating from about the middle of the present millennium. Its compiler, who was a man of ordinary calibre, ascribed it to Bhadrabāhu, evidently with the object of giving it sanctity, popularity and authoritiveness. His knowledge of Bhadrabāhu’s traditional mastery of

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textsuperscript{65} Ibid., author’s intro., p. 6.
  \item \textsuperscript{66} Ibid., p. 20.
\end{itemize}
astrology must have emboldened him to do so. This was not uncommon in ancient India as a number of comparatively late texts ascribed to traditionally reputed astrologers and astronomers are known to exist even now. The extant Bhadrabāhusāñhitā is thus a very late compilation forged in the name of the renowned Jain patriarch.

The text of the Bhadrabāhusāñhitā as it has come down to us bears the appearance of a Jain work of the Digambara school. It begins with a salutation to Jina Vīra, i.e., Mahāvīra, and, we have seen above, is represented to have been composed by Bhadrabāhu in response to the request of his pupils. The object of its composition among other things, was to enable the Jain monks to know in advance the places to be visited by calamities and take refuge in other prosperous countries (I.11). Bhadrabāhu is styled Nirgranthā (I. 6) and described as sky-clad (Dig-vāsas, II. 1). The work is said to have been based on the words of Sarvajñā (I. 11, 14) or Jina (II. 2), and a statement found in it is represented to be from the Nirgranthasāñana or the sayings of the Nirgranthas (IV. 28). In the colophons of individual chapters, the title of the work,

67 Nemittio (Naimittika) is known to have been employed as one of the synonyms used for Bhadrabāhu. See Punyavijaya, op. cit., p. 13, note 3.
68 Such are, for example, the works attributed to Brahman, Vasiṣṭha, Sūrya, Maya, Garga, Kaśyapa, etc. Similar works exist in the field of Dharmaśāstra, Ayurveda, and Śilpaśāstra also.
69 As an analogy we may mention the fact that, as works supposed to have been composed by the ganadhāras were regarded as more authoritative than those composed by others, in later times the tendency to attribute even late works to them came into existence. Thus, some of the Cheda-sūtras and even some Purāṇas came to be ascribed to the ganadhāras. (Dalsukh Malvania, Ganadhārzāda ki Prastāvanā, pp. 8-12; Niśītha: Eka Adhyayana, pp. 18-20).
70 This verse is found only in Shastri's ed. The opening verse of Ch. XXVI also pays obeisance to Mahāvīra.
71 According to XX.1, the movement of Rāhu dealt with in Ch. XX is also based on the teachings of the Nirgranthas well versed in the twelve Āṅgas. Likewise, XIII.42 (Shastri's ed.) proclaims that the nimittas dealt with in the chapter are actually those spoken by the Jina (Jina-bhāṣīta).
i.e., Bhadrabähukanimitta or Bhadrabähunimittasāstra, is generally qualified by the adjective Nairgrantha, i.e., belonging to the Nirgranthas. Then again at the end of some of the chapters the monks are advised to leave one country and seek shelter in another if the former was to be afflicted by certain disasters (XII. 38; XIV. 181; XV. 230; XXV. 49). But a close examination of the contents reveals a number of Brahmancial elements which tell us a quite different tale. Thus, speaking of the importance of the nimittas while undertaking a military expedition, it is said that even the gods had taken the nimittas into account (XIII. 23). We are further told in the same vein that neither the Vedas nor the Aṅgas (i.e., Vedāṅgas) nor the sciences (vidyās), taken individually, can meet those requirements which are met with by a well-told nimitta. One would normally expect a Jain text to enumerate the various branches of learning beginning with the canon and not with the Vedas which were an object of reverence only for the followers of Brahmancial Hinduism. It cannot be argued that the word aṅgā may have reference to the Jain canon comprising twelve Aṅgas, for, as the word is preceded by reference to the Vedas, it can denote only the Vedāṅgas. Considerable space is devoted to the description of portents taken from fire while performing homa (offerings to fire) on the eve of a military march (XIII. 52-60). The Brahmancial practice of regarding the nāksatras as presided over by various gods and referring to them by the names of respective divinities is also followed (III. 38-39; XIII. 96-27). As a means of warding off certain evil portents, the author recommends the worship of gods, Brahmānās initiated for the performance of Vedic sacrifices (dikṣita), elderly people and Brahmacārins, for the sins of the kings are extinguished by

72 Occasionally we find the use of the word Nirgrantha which is evidently an error for Nairgrantha. It may not be regarded as an error.—Ed.
73 Also cf. XIV.182; XX1.58; XXIII.58; XXIV.43.
74 Na Vedā n-āpi c-āngān na vidyās-ē ca prthak prthak/ prasādhyayanti tān-ārthān nimittam yat subhāṣitam (XIII.38)
their penance (XIII.116). Referring to the duties of a king, after the conquest of a new territory, the work recommends that he should worship the gods, elderly people, Brahmanical ascetics or Brahmacārins (liṅgastha), Brāhmaṇas and teachers and make revenue-free land grants (XIII.181). 74a No mention is made in this connection of Jain monks which would be reasonably expected of a Jain author. Again, while dealing with the upāstas relating to divine images, the author first names Brahmanical gods and goddesses like Vaiśravaṇa, Candra, Varuṇa, Rudra, Indra, Baladeva,75 Vāsudeva,76 Pradyumna, Sūrya, Śrī, Viśvakarman, Bhadrakāli,77 Indrāṇi, Dhanvantari, Jāmudaguya Rāma (Parāśurāma) and Sulasa (XIV. 62-81), and it is only while summarising the whole thing again that mention is made of the images of the Arhats (XIV. 82). One would be justified in expecting a Jain author to accord the Tirthankara images a place of honour and others a secondary place. The case is, however, just the opposite. And lastly, the author is not only familiar with, but gives great importance to the Brahmanical system of the four Varnas. Thus, while describing the effects of astrological phenomena on worldly life, he generally begins with the mention of the four castes in the prescribed order. He also appears to believe in the traditional association of colours and castes and frequently refers to white, red, yellow and black phenomena as particularly affecting the Brāhmaṇas, Kṣatriyas, Vaiśyas and

74a Cf. XX1.54 which recommends the worship, among others, of those initiated for the performance of Vedic sacrifices, manes and Brāhmaṇas for warding off the effects of the appearance of evil comets.

75 The reading in the relevant verse is balandeve (XIV.68) and there is also a variant, bale kaścit, which gives no sense. The correct reading, particularly as Vāsudeva is mentioned in the following stanza, must be Baladeve, which has been corrupted to balandeve in the interest of the metre.

76 The mention of Vāsudeva after Baladeva points to the earlier period when Vira-worship was popular. The verse in question (XIV.69), as well as the preceding one, therefore, appears to have been taken from some early text.

77 Gopani’s ed. gives the reading bhadrastali (XIV.75) which is obviously a mistake for Bhadrakāli as given by Shastri.
Śūdras respectively. These few instances picked up at random appear to reveal that the extant Bhadrabāhusāṁhitā probably originated out of a Brāhmaṇical text which was later converted to a Jain one by introducing a few changes and additions such as the introductory portion associating the work with Bhadrabāhu, the concluding stanzas at the end of some chapters referring to the utility of the predictions for Jain monks and occasional references to the worship of Jina images and such other kindred elements. But the garb is transparent enough to reveal its original character which is quite eloquent.

Did then Bhadrabāhu not compose any work on astrology? As we have noted above, he was traditionally reputed to have been well-versed in astrology (nimittas), and it is quite possible that he may have composed some work on the subject. But if he really did so, unfortunately we know neither its title nor the exact nature and extent of its contents. It was probably not known as Bhadrabāhusāṁhitā, for this name is not met with in the extensive Jain literature prior to about the middle of the fourteenth century A.D. The title was obviously imitated from Varāhamihira’s Samhitā which, in addition to the name Brāhatsāṁhitā, was also called Vārāhi Samhitā after the author’s name, with the motive of highlighting the alleged competition of Varāhamihira and Bhadrabāhu, which was a creation of wild imagination on the part of some Jain authors.

And just as the statement of the author of the Prabhanda-kośa about Bhadrabāhu writing a Samhitā alleged to have been christened after his own name is untrustworthy, so also must be his alleged contemporaneity and relationship with Varāhamihira. Thus, the Varāhamihira-Bhadrabāhu episode narrated by Merutunga and Rājaśekharasūri does not appear to possess any historical value and as such need not be taken into account in any historical study. It is noteworthy in this

78 E.g., XIV.22-23, 31, 58, 99-101; XX.2, 57; cf. XIV.57 (association of certain trees and castes); XXIV.18-21 (association of certain sīthīs and castes).

79 Cf. XIII.76; Pariśīṣṭ-ādhyāya, verses 30, 143, 158, etc.
connection that this anecdote is not found in any work datable before the fourteenth century A.D.

The following are therefore our conclusions—

(i) The contemporaneity of the śrutakevalin Bhadrabāhu and Varāhamihira contemplated by Merutuṅga and Rājašekharasūri must be rejected as it goes against the internal evidence of Varāhamihira’s own works.

(ii) It is possible that the episode has reference to a later Bhadrabāhu who composed the niryaṅkis and was confused with his earlier namesake because of the sameness of their names.

(iii) An examination of the available Bhadrabāhusamhitā proves that it has nothing to do with any of the personages bearing the name Bhadrabāhu and that it is inferior to and later than Varāhamihira’s Brāhmaṇyamala to which it is indebted for many an idea and stanza. In fact, it is an unintelligent compilation of about the middle of the present millennium attributed to Bhadrabāhu with the object of according it a respectable position.

(iv) The text of the Bhadrabāhusamhitā as it has come down to us appears to belong to the Digambara sect of Jainism. But a critical appraisal of its contents reveals that, in all probability, the text was originally a Brāhmaṇical one and was later given a Jain appearance by adding a few Jainistic elements here and there.

(v) Although Bhadrabāhu may have composed a work on astrology, it was probably not known as Bhadrabāhusamhitā, which name is met with for the first time in the fourteenth century A.D.

(vi) As shown by a critical examination of the contents of the Prabandhacintāmanī and Prabandhakośa, also called Catuvimśatprabandha, their authors, Merutuṅga and Rājašekharasūri, had no historical sense, and the Varāhamihira-Bhadrabāhu episode recorded by them must be dismissed as of no historical value whatsoever.*

* [The suggestion regarding the existence of several Bhadrabahus is really not supported by any strong evidence.—Ed.]
X

A JAIN HISTORICAL TRADITION

D. C. Sircar, Calcutta University

The Jain literature abounds in works containing numerous historical and pseudo-historical traditions. We had occasion to deal with a few of them belonging to various grades of reliability, in regard to all of which we cannot agree with the view that 'Jaina chroniclers deliberately manipulated history'. The traditions examined by us include—(1) the chronology of Pradyota, Pālaka and others as found in Merutunga's Therāvali, which we considered to be a late and unreliable fabrication; (2) the Sīhāvirālicarita or Pariśīṣṭaparvan by Hemacandra (1088-1172 A.D.) representing Nanda as the son of a courtesan by a barber, which is remarkably supported, strangely enough, by the Classical writer Curtius (first century A.D.) who says that the father of the last Nanda, contemporary of Alexander the Great, was a barber; (3) the two divergent traditions recorded in the Tiloyapanaṇṭi that the Guptas ruled for 231 years according to one and 255 years according to the other, both of which we have taken to be correct, the first suggesting the collapse of Gupta rule in U. P. about 550 A.D. and the latter pointing to its close in Orissa about 574 A.D., and (4) the statement of the Bappabhāṭṭicarita that king Yaśōvarman (c. 725-33 A.D.) of Kanauj was a descendant of Maurya Candragupta assigned to c. 324-300 B.C., which was so long rejected by

1 See G. C. Choudhary, Political History of Northern India from Jain Sources (c. 650 to 1300 A.D.), pp. 1ff.
3 Ancient Malwa and the Vikramādiṭya Tradition, p. 31.
4 VI.231-32.
historians, but may be really correct, because we have now discovered in a Mathurā inscription a seventh century Maurya king named Candragupta whose grandson Śindirāja Karka claims to have burnt the city of Kānyakubja.

Recently our attention has been drawn to a statement in the Sanatkumāracaritram which is a section of Haribhadra’s Nemināhacariu. Haribhadra, a pupil of Śricandra who was a pupil of Jinacandra, completed the Nemināhacariu in Apabhramśa in the year 1159 A.D. We learn from the colophon of the said section that Vira of the Prāgvāta community was Mūlarāja’s minister in charge of the ṭaṅkaśālā (mint) which produced coins bearing the figure of the goddess Lakṣmī. Prāgvāta is the Sanskrit form of the name of the Por or Porwār belonging to the Porwāl community of merchants of Western India, being one of the eighty-four gacchas or families of the Jains. The said Mūlarāja is Mūlarāja I of the Caulukya or Solaṅki dynasty of Gujarat, who ruled in 961-96 A.D., because Mūlarāja II of the same family reigned in 1176-78 A.D., i.e. sometime after the composition of the Nemināhacariu.

The above tradition, recorded by Haribhadra in 1159 A.D. about a century and a half after the death of Mūlarāja I in 996 A.D., seems to be genuine; because, in ancient and medieval India, coins once in the market remained in circulation for centuries, and it is possible that Haribhadra saw some such coins of Mūlarāja I. However, the tradition assumes some significance when we remember that no coins of the Caulukya or Solaṅki family have as yet been discovered. The question

---

8 See also Ep. Ind., Vol. XXXII, pp. 207ff.
10 Choudhary, op. cit., p. 232. This Vira of the Prāgvāta clan may be different from Mularaja’s minister of the same name who is supposed to have belonged to the Cāpokīta clan (A. K. Majumdar, Caulukyas of Gujarat, p. 32).
11 See Wilson’s Glossary of Judicial and Revenue Terms, s.v. Porwāl.
13 Ibid., p. 1048.
now is: if the tradition is accepted as genuine, how can we explain the absence of any coin bearing the name of Mūlarāja?

There may be several answers to this question, the first of them being that the coins were not issued in large quantities and the few coins that were available to the people were melted for making ornaments. We have other instances of this kind. Thus, although no coins bearing the name of any of the Sūryavamsī Gajapati kings of Orissa have so far been discovered, Jivadeva's Bhaktiḥāgavatā composed in 1510 A.D. speaks of gold coins bearing the figure of Gopāla (Kṛṣṇa) and the king's name which had been issued by the author's disciple, the Gajapati king Pratāparudra (1497-1540 A.D.), and were in circulation in many lands.¹⁴ No such coin has, however, as yet come out. In the same way, the Rewa inscription (1193 A.D.)¹⁵ of Malayasiṁha a feudatory of Kalacuri Vijayasimha of Tripuri, says that the chief excavated a tank with 15,000 taṅkas (i.e. taṅka, probably of silver) stamped with the figure of the Bhagavat meaning the Buddha, though there is no indication regarding the issuer of the coins. In this case also, no coins of the type have been so far discovered.

Another possibility is that, unlike the Gopāla type gold coins of Pratāparudra which bore his name, the issues of Mūlarāja I referred to in Haribhadra's work may not have had a legend mentioning the king's name. In any case, the coins remind us of the seated Laksmi type issues (in gold and possibly also in silver) of the Kalacuri king Gāṅgeyadeva Vikramāditya (c. 1015-41 A.D.) and their imitations minted by the rulers of dynasties like the Candellas and Gāhada-vālas.¹⁶ Mūlarāja I, however, ruled earlier than the said

---

Kalacuri king and may have imitated the coins of the Kashmirian kings like Jañāpiñḍa Vinayāditya (c. 750-80 A.D.). In connection with the probable issue of coins by the Caulukya king Mūlarāja I, we have to refer to the attribution of certain dramma coins to king Visala or Viśvamalla (c. 1244-62 A.D.) of the Caulukya-Vāghela dynasty of Gujarāt. Thus it has been said, "In the epigraphic records there are references to Visalapri-dra, Visalapriya-dramma, Viṣa-dra and Visalapurī-dra. The Lekhapaṭhāti calls these both Viśvamalapriya- and Visalapriya-dramma. These coins have most likely to be ascribed to king Viṣaladeva of the Vāghelā dynasty [of Gujarāt]." We have, however, elsewhere tried to show that Visala or Viśvamalla, associated with the issue of these coins, was not the Caulukya-Vāghelā king who flourished in the middle of the thirteenth century A.D., but that he was really a Śreṣṭhin who was the lessee of the mint issuing the said coins. In addition to our argument against the identification of the issuer of the coins with the Caulukya-Vāghelā king of the same name, we may now point out that the coins are described in the Lekhapaṭhāti as produced at the mint (taṅka-śālā) at Śrīmāla which was also called Bhīlamāla and is the same as modern Bhinmal in the Jodhpur Division of Rajasthan. It seems that the Bhinmal region of Jodhpur did not form any part of Viṣalā’s dominions. Even during the greatest expansion of the Caulukya kingdom under Kumārapāla (1144-73 A. D.), the said area formed a border chieftaincy far away from the centre of the Caulukya king’s power. Haribhadra’s statement, however, suggests that Mūlarāja I had a taṅka-śālā at his capital.

17 Smith, op. cit., p. 269.
20 See p. 20, 42.
SUPPLEMENT
XI
THE JAIN HARIVAMŚA
Asim Kumar Chatterjee, Centre of Advanced
Study in AIHC, Calcutta University

Unlike most of the ancient and early mediaeval Indian
works, the date of the Harivamśa of Jinasena II¹ is known.
The date which the poet himself has given in the colophon
of his work (66. 52) is Śaka 705 which corresponds to the
year 783 of the Christian era. Jinasena II gives the names
of some contemporary kings of India, viz. Indrāyudha of
Kanauj, Śrīvallabha, son king Kuśa of the South, i.e. of the
Rāṣṭrakūta dynasty, Vatsarāja called Avanti-bhūbhṛt and Varāha
of the West. Historical existence of all these four kings is
proved by contemporary epigraphic records.² From the next
verse (66. 53), we learn that the composition of the poem was
started at the town of Vardhamāna (modern Vādvān) in the
temple of Pārśvanātha, the penultimate Jain Tīrthāṅkara,
built by king Nanna and completed at the town of Dostākā
(identified with Dottāḍi between Vādvān and Girnar) in the
temple of Śāntinātha, the 16th Jain Tīrthāṅkara. It should be
pointed out, in this connexion, that at the same town of
Vardhamāna, Hariśena composed his Kathākośa in Śaka 853,
corresponding to 925 A.D.** We propose to identify this
Vardhamāna with the town of the same name mentioned several

¹ Since Jinasena has himself mentioned (I.40) an earlier Jinasena, who
was a disciple of Vīrāsenā and afterwards composed his Adipurāṇa
we are compelled to call our author ‘Jinasena II’. [There is some confusion
in the tradition.—Ed.]

² [Kanauj is not mentioned in the verse.—Ed.]

³ See The Age of Imperial Kanauj (ed. R. C. Majumdar), pp. 21ff.,
101. [Varāha or Jayavarāha of the Saurya-mandala does not appear to be
known from any inscription.—Ed.]

** [There is some inaccuracy.—Ed.]
times in the *Kathāsaritsāgara.* Tawney, the well-known translator of this famous poem of Somadeva, had wrongly identified this town with Burdwan in Bengal, although Barnett had doubts regarding this identification. From a story of that work, we learn that the Brāhmaṇa youth Śaktideva reached the Vindhya forest after journeying southwards from the city of Vardhamāna—

\[\text{evam kṛta-pratijñāḥ san Vardhamānapurāḥ tataḥ}\\ \text{dakṣiṇāṁ diśam—ālambya sa prasthate tadā dvijaḥ}\\ \text{krameṇa gacchanti = ca prāpa so—'tha Vindhya-mahāśavīṁ'}\\]

This shows that the town of Vardhamāna was to the north of the Vindhya which agrees more with the present position of Vaḍvān in Gujarat than Burdwan of West Bengal. The same town is also mentioned as the place where Lavaṇaprasāda, king of Gujarat, built a temple of Kumāra in the year 1253 A.D.

\[\text{savidhe Vardhamāna[svya] spardhamānaṁ payodhinā}\\ \text{adhākṛta-sudhāsāram yaḥ Kumāram=akārayat}\\]

The epithet kārtasvar-āpūrya-jan-ādhīvāsa applied to this town in the *Kathākośa* of Hariśena shows that the city enjoyed a great deal of prosperity during the mediaeval period. In the *Harivarṇaśa* also Vardhamāna gets the adjective vipula-śrī (kalyānaṁ parivardhamāna-vipula-śrī Vardhamāne pure).

---


5 *Loc. cit.*

6 Ed. Durgadas and Parab, 25. 5-6.

*[Since Vaḍvān or Vaḍhvān lies in the Kathiawar region of Gujarat, it is no more to the north of the Vindhayas than Burdwan in West Bengal. ‘Vindhya’ is the name applied to mountain ranges running from Gujarat to Bengal. There are, however, too many Vardhamānas in North India.—Ed.]*


8 See P. L. Jain’s *Prastāvanā* (in Hindi) in this edition of the *Harivarṇaśa,* p. 4.

9 66.33.
The first thing that strikes a reader of the Harivamśa is its similarity with the Kathāsaritsāgara which, as we know, is a Sanskrit translation of the now-lost Bhāratakathā. The romantic exploits of Vasudeva, the father of Kṛṣṇa, will invariably remind one of those of Naravāhanadatta in Somadeva's translation. Some of the heroines of Jinasena II like Aṅgāravati, Vegavati, Bandhumati, Padmāvati, Kalīgasena, etc., also occur in the Kathāsaritsāgara. The enemy of the amorous Vasudeva in the Harivamśa is a Vidyādhara named Mānasavega whose name occurs prominently in the Kathāsaritsāgara. The only difference between Somadeva and Jinasena II is that the latter describes in a few lines what the former would say in a few hundred verses. We have little doubt that the author of the Harivamśa Purāṇa had before him the original Pañcāci version of Guṇāḍhyya, which was probably composed in the early centuries of the Christian era.

But it has to be remembered that the successful romantic adventures of Vasudeva cover only a portion of Jinasena's very considerable work which runs to as many as 66 chapters. He has described in greater details the achievements of Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva and there is very little doubt that, in doing so, he has more or less followed the well-known Vaiṣṇava Hari-vamśa, believed to be an integral part of the Mahābhārata. The description of Dvārakā (Ch. 41), the death of Kaṁsa at Kṛṣṇa's hands (Ch. 36) and the wrestling bout of Kṛṣṇa and his brother with Cāṇūra and Muśṭika (Ch. 36) are all taken from the Vaiṣṇava Harivamśa. The destruction of the Vṛṣṇis and the last days of Kṛṣṇa and his brother too are the same as given in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa and the Mahābhārata. Jinasena II,

10 In this connexion we reproduce below the following stōka from Somadeva (1.10)—

yatā mālam tathā dvī = alai = na manant = apya = atikramah |
grantha = vistara = sahāsapam = mātram = bhāṣa = ca bhādyate |

See also in this connexion the Sanskrit introduction of Durgadas and Parab to their edition of this work, p. 1, note. [But the claim that the entire Kathāsaritsāgara is an exact translation of Guṇāḍhyya's work is absurd.—Ed.]
however, follows the tradition preserved in the Jātakas\textsuperscript{11} and the Arthasastra\textsuperscript{12} according to which the Vṛṣṇis were destroyed because they were cursed by the sage Dvaipāyana. The Mahābhārata\textsuperscript{13} and the major Purāṇas, on the other hand, give the names of some other munis (viz., Viśvāmitra, Kaṇva and Nārada) as having cursed the Vṛṣṇis.

Although the author of the Jain Harivamśa has followed the story of Kṛṣṇa as preserved in the Vaisṇava Harivamśa, it has to be said that he has not blindly imitated the latter work in respect of language. Even when he borrows his materials from earlier works, he gives ample evidence of his fine poetical power. In this connexion, we can refer to the magnificent description of Rājagṛha in Chapter 3, the city being also called Pañcaśailapura because it is surrounded by five hills (3.52). For this information, Jinasena II is apparently indebted to the earlier work\textsuperscript{14} Tiloyapaṇṇatti by Yatīvṛṣabha (Jādivasāha), which gives the name Pañcaselanayara\textsuperscript{15} (i.e. Pañcaśailanagara) for Rājagṛha. Although a staunch Jain, our poet seldom lets off an opportunity to describe a love scene.

We are reproducing below a few lines from the 23rd chapter (verses 19-21)—

\begin{verbatim}
paribhramya ciram śobhām paśyantau tripti-varjitu\n
gireś saṇuṣu ramyeṣu ramrayete sma sasmarau\n
tayok sambhoga-sambhārah puṣpa-pallava-kalpite\ntalpe’=nalpo’=pi khedāya samajāyata no tadā/
\end{verbatim}

\textsuperscript{11} Nos. 454 and 530; cf. also the following verse (No. 530; Cowell's \textit{trans.}, Vol. V, pp. 55-56)—

\begin{verbatim}
Kaiḍhāpyanāṣajja istic Ṭhṇakaveṇḍayo/
aḍḍoṇānī shalaḥ saṃtvā sampattā Yama-sādhanam/\n\end{verbatim}


\textsuperscript{12} Pandit Puskalay ed., p. 18.

\textsuperscript{13} XVI. 1.15.

\textsuperscript{14} This work was, in all probability, composed in the first half of the 7th century A.D. See Introd. (ed. H. L. Jain and A. N. Upadhye), Part II, pp. 4ff. (English); pp. 9ff. (Hindi).

\textsuperscript{15} 1.65.
cireṇa rati-sambhoga-sambhūta-sveda-bhūṣyatau
niśkrāntau kadali-gehāt-tau raktākta-vilocanau//

The same chapter also contains the following sloka (verse 153):

rahasya-kṛtā-vakṣasā ghanā-payoṭhār-otpūdhanam
cucumba sa-kaaca-graham jaghanam—ājaghān = ēdharami
dadumṣa mvaro varah sa-nakha-pātum = oṣyā
vadhūr = viveda madan-āturā na ca tathāvidham bādhanam!//

His description of the beauty of queen Marudēvi (Ch.8) or his delineation of the autumn (16.22ff.) also proves his worth as a poet. Sometimes, like Kalidāsa, he can be devastatingly romantic, as for example, in the description of the longing of king Sumukha of Kaushāmbi (14.32ff.) for the wife of a merchant called Vanamāla. Here for the first time, the poet Jinasena gets the upper hand over the Jain disciplinarian Jinasena. He not only makes Sumukha a successful lover of a parastrī, but even allows him to marry her. It is something which even liberal Jains will look upon as outrageous and can only be described by a poet like Somadeva. But since this Sumukha is an admirer of the Jains, all his sins are readily forgiven and forgotten!

Our poet has sometimes deliberately distorted epic or Purānic accounts or has given a new version. As for example, in Jinasena’s account, Kīcaka is punished and not killed by Bhima. The former, we are told, after his defeat by Bhima, turned into a Jain ascetic (56.37 ff.). Jarāśandha’s killer, according to Jinasena II, was Kṛṣṇa and not Bhima (59. 80 ff.). Draupadi’s svayamvara is mentioned; but she is represented as the daughter of the king of Mākandi, and instead of Jayadratha, her kidnapper here is a demon named Padmapānabha (Ch. 54). She is ultimately rescued not by Bhima, but by Kṛṣṇa himself. The latter, however, is represented as having become disgusted with the Pāṇḍavas in the long run. Because of Kṛṣṇa’s opposition, the Pāṇḍavas were forced to leave Hastināpura and had to settle in Mathurā of the South.

16 A few such stories are found in the Kathāsaritsāgara.
(54. 73) which is elsewhere described as a town in the Pallava territory (64. 1). This shows that during Jinasena’s time, i.e. in the last quarter of the 8th century A.D., Madura, which was previously held by the Pândyas, passed into the hands of the Pallavas. And we should note that Jinasena II was a contemporary of the famous Pallava king Nandivarman II Pallavamalla who ruled for at least about 65 years.\(^\text{17}\) Jinasena’s evidence shows that at least for a few years, in the last quarter of the 8th century, the region around Madura was captured by the Pallavas from the Pândyas who were the natural enemies of the Pallavas.\(^*\)

Interestingly enough, the poet of the Jain Harivamśa makes Jarā (called Jāratkumāra) a brother of Kṛṣṇa and a son of Vasudeva (62. 38-39). Probably the idea of a vyādha killing one of the Triṣaṭśiśalākāpurusas was difficult for our poet to stomach and that is why he has painted Kṛṣṇa’s killer as an aristocrat.\(^**\)

Jinasena II speaks of one Andhakavṛṣṇi\(^\text{18}\) as the son of Śūra and he is represented as the father of the following ten sons—Samuḍravijaya, Akṣobhya, Stimitasāgara, Himavat, Vijaya, Acala, Dhāraṇa, Pūrṇa, Abhicandra and Vasudeva. The name Andhakavṛṣṇi is the Sanskrit form of Pāli Andhaka-venhu found in the Ghaṭa Jātaka (No. 454), who too is represented as the father of ten sons including Vasudeva. The names of Andhaka-venhu’s sons are quite different in that Jātaka; they are—Vasudeva, Baladeva, Candadeva, Suriyadeva, Aggideva, Varuṇadeva, Ajjuna, Pajjuna, Ghaṭa-paṇḍita and Amkura. There is absolutely no doubt that most of the names of the two lists are fanciful. What is of interest to note is the name Andhakavṛṣṇi which actually represents the two principal Yādava tribes, viz. Andhaka and Viṣṇi.\(^***\)

\(^{17}\) See The Classical Age (ed. R. C. Majumdar), pp. 262f.

\(^*\) [There seems to be no truth in Jinasena’s statement.—Ed.]

\(^**\) [The purpose was the distortion of the Brāhmaṇical account, which the Jain and Buddhist authors enjoyed.—Ed.]

\(^{18}\) 18. 12-14.

\(^{18}\) [According to the Purāṇas, the progenitors of these two clans were Andhaka and Viṣṇi who were the sons of Śāivata of the Yadu tribe.—Ed.]
The genealogy of some of the kings of the Solar and Lunar dynasties given by Jinasena II, like Somadeva, is fanciful. Instead of Parikṣit, we are told, one Āryasūnu succeeded Yudhīṣṭhira on the throne of Hastināpura. In this connexion, it should be pointed out that the Vaiṣṇava Harivarṇaśaⁱ⁹ also gives a curious list of Janamejaya’s successors. But it should be remembered that this list occurs in the Bhaviṣya-parvan of the Harivarṇaśa, undoubtedly a later addition to that work. According to the fanciful list of Janamejaya’s successors in Somadeva’s translation,²⁰ Udayana, a contemporary of the Buddha, was separated from Janamejaya, the grandson of Abhimanyu, by three generations (viz. Śatāṅka, Sahasrāṅka and Udayana) only. This not only goes against the epic and Purāṇic lists, but also against all the known lists of Janamejaya’s successors. It is a matter of regret that a historian like Raychaudhuri²¹ should take this list seriously. As a matter of fact, Raychaudhuri’s attempt at reconstructing the pre-Bimbisārid political history of India is a disaster as he is obsessed with the Müllerian 1500 B. C. Aryan invasion theory, and that is why he was prepared to accept a comparatively late date for Parikṣit and his son.²²

For the student of Indology the most important section of the Jain Harivarṇaśa is that which deals with geography.

---

¹⁹ III, Ch. 1.

²⁰ See Kathā, 9. 6 69. See also Tawney and Penzer, op. cit., Vol. I, pp. 94ff.


²² He would even assign Janaka, the father of Śitā, to the 7th century B.C. (see ibid., p. 52) which would make Rāma’s father-in-law an older contemporary of Śuddhodana. [We are inclined to agree with Raychaudhuri in attaching importance to the traditions in Vedic literature and would attach little or no importance to Epico-purāṇic myths (cf. The Bhāratavīra and Purāṇic Genealogies, 18ff., 105ff.). The Aryan advent into India in the middle of the second millennium B.C. has been sought to be supported by the discoveries at Boghaz-koēi, Mohenjodaro, Harappa and other places.—Ed.]
And here we get some new information not found in other works. Very important is the occurrence of the name Karnasuvarna in a verse (52. 93) which runs as follows—

\[ \text{tat=suvān-ākṣaram yatra karna-kundalam=atyāyat} \]

\[ \text{Karnāḥ Karnasuvara-ākhyāṁ sthānam tat=kirtitam janaiḥ} / / \]

Prof. S. R. Das informs us that a similar legend regarding the origin of this town, is current among the local people. This is the only reference to this city in Indian literature, it being previously known from the Nidhanpur plates of Bhāskararvarman\textsuperscript{23} and Hiuen-tsang's accounts.\textsuperscript{24} Bāga calls Śāśānka lord of Gauda, but does not mention Karnasuvarna.

In Chapter 11, there is a detailed list of peoples of India (verses 64-75). The author has divided the whole country in seven different parts, viz. Centre (Madhyadeśa), North, East, South, West, Vindhaya region, and the seventh and last under the heading Madhyadeśaśrītāḥ (dependencies of Madhyadeśa). Since Jinasena's list is almost unknown, we are reproducing it below.

1. **Madhyadeśa**—Kurujāṅgala, Pañcāla, Śūrasena, Paṭaccara, Tuliṅga, Kāśi, Kauśalya, Madrakāra, Vṛkārthaka, Sālva, Āvṛṣṭa, Trigarta, Kuśāgra, Matsya, Kuniyān, Kośala and Moka.

2. **North**—Bāhlika, Ātreya, Kāmboja, Yavana, Ābhira, Madraka, Kvāṭhatoya, Śūra, Vāṭavāna, Kaikaya, Gāndhāra, Sindhu, Sauvira, Bhāradvāja, Daśeruka, Prāsthāla, Tiruakarna.

3. **East**—Khaḍga, Aṅgāraka, Pauṇḍra, Malla, Pravaka, Mastaka, Prādyotīsa (Prāgyotīsa), Vaṅga, Magadhā, Mānavartika, Malada, Bhārgava.

4. **South**—Bāṇamukta, Vaidarbha, Māṇava, Sakakāpīra, Mūlaka, Aśmaka, Dāṇḍika, Kaliṅga, Ānisika, Kuntala, Navaraśtra, Māhiṣaka, Puruṣa, Bhogavardhana.

5. **West**—Mālya, Kallivanopānta, Durga, Sūrpāra, Kar-, būka, Kākṣi, Nāsārika, Āgarta, Sārasvata, Tāpasa,
Māhebha, Bharukaccha, Surāṣṭra, Narmada.


(7) Madhyadeśāśrītāḥ—Bhadra, Vatsa, Videha, Kuśa, Bhaṅga, Saitava, Vajrakhaṇḍika.*

The most significant name of the entire list according to our opinion, is Khaḍga. The Khaḍgas are known from two inscriptions found from South-East Bengal or ancient Sama-taṭa. The first found from Ashrafpur has been assigned to the 7th century A.D. although some scholars suggest a much later date. According to Bhattachari, the palaeography of these plates is older than the early Pāla inscriptions. The Ashrafpur plates contain a date which has been variously read as 73 or 79 and the majority of scholars feel that the date belongs to the Harṣa era (606 A.D.).** If this view be accepted,

---

*This list is almost wholly based on the Purāṇic lists of janapadas which are full of wrong readings. See also the author’s remarks below. The peculiar names in the Harivamśa are mostly due to such mistakes; e.g. Tūliṅga—Bhulinā, Vṛkarthaka—Vṛk-Andhaka, Āvrṭa—Āvanta, Kuṣāgra—Kuṭṭiau—Kulya, Moka—Mūka (Vṛka), Kṛватhakya—Kālaloya, Vatiṅsā—Vatadhāna, Daśeruka—Daseraka, Prāsthāla—Prathala, Bṛḍamukta—Vanavāsaka, Aṅgāra—Aṅgeyaka, Pravaka—Pravāṅga, Mastaka—Mallaka, Dāṇḍika—Dāṇḍaka, Aṃśika—Aṅgika, Purusa—Paurika, Mālya—Muleya, Kallivanopānta—Kolavana, Karbēka—Ardoua, Nāsārka—Nāsika, Aṅgarta—Aṅarta, Māhebha—Māheya, Āvarta—Anarta, Uttamavarna—Uttamarna, Antapa—Anuṣpa, Vinihātra—Vitihottara, etc. See Sircar, Stud. Geog. Anc. Med. Ind., 1971, pp. 70ff. and notes.—Ed.]


26 See B. C. Sen, Some Historical Aspects of the Inscriptions of Bengal, pp. 271-81.

27 See R. D. Banerji, JASB (NS), Vol. XIX, pp. 375-79; see also Vāṅgāḷār Itihās, p. 233. [Banerji is certainly wrong.—Ed.]


*Both the Ashrafpur copper-plate grants were issued in the Khaḍga king’s 13th regnal year. There is no possibility of the use of the Harṣa era in the region in question.—Ed.]
then we have to assign the Ashrafpur plates either to 679 or to 685 A.D. The Ashrafpur plates contain the names of a few Khaḍga kings beginning from Khadgodyama and ending with Rājarājabhaṭṭa. The latter has been identified with Rajabhāta mentioned by the Chinese pilgrim I-tsing (671 A.D.). The second inscription of the Khadgas, viz. the Śarvāṇi image inscription, also discloses the names of the kings mentioned in the Ashrafpur plates. We do not know exactly at what time Khaḍga rule in Samatāta terminated; but Jinasena's reference proves that they continued to maintain a separate existence till 783 A.D.

The Mallas, referred to like the Khadgas as an eastern people, may be identified with the Mallas of the Mahābodhi region referred to in an inscription of Dharmapāla's 26th year (Mallānām Mahābodhi-nivāsīnām). We must remember in this connexion that Jinasena II was a contemporary of Indrāyudha who was later dethroned by Dharmapāla. So there is no real difficulty in identifying Jinasena's Mallas with the Mallas referred to in Dharmapāla's inscription mentioned above.* In the Ādipurāṇa of Jinasena I, a work probably composed sometime after the Harivamśa Purāṇa, there is reference to Malladeśa which is placed immediately after Kirāṭa-vaśya. The Mallas are, however, repeatedly referred to in the ancient texts including the Buddhist, epic and Purānic works. From pre-Buddhist times, they were divided into two peoples, viz. the Malla proper and Dakṣiṇa-Malla. Probably the Mallas,

---

29 Beal, Life of Hiuen Tsiang, Intro., pp. xlv, xl; see also Sen, op. cit., p. 80.
30 Gauḍālekhamāla, pp. 31-32.
[*The name was borrowed from the Purānic list of eastern peoples. See p. 108, note above and the author's remarks below, p. 110 and notes.—Ed.]
32 See P. L. Jain, op. cit., p. 8; see also the Introd. in Hindi by the same scholar in his edition of the Ādipurāṇa, p. 34.
34 See Mahābhārata, II. 30. 3, 12.
referred in the above-mentioned inscription of Dharmapāla, were later descendants of the Mailas of the Mahābhārata and early Buddhist texts.

A glance over the list of the Harivamśa would show that a great many names are traditional. But there are quite a few which are absent in the earlier or later lists. We have already mentioned the Khadgas whose existence were previously known only from two Bengal inscriptions. We have carefully compared this list with Sircar's exhaustive list of ancient Indian peoples given in his Cosmography and Geography in Early Indian Literature, published in 1967, and have found the following names of Jinasena II missing in his list viz.—Tuliṅga (who, however, may be identified with Bhuliṅga or Tuliṅga of Sircar's list),\(^5\) Ávṛṣṭa, Kuśāgra Kuniyān, Kvāthatoya, Śūra (may be a mistake for 'Śūdra'),\(^6\) Pravaka (probably a variant of ‘Pravāṅga’),\(^7\) Mastaka, Mānavartika (may be the same as Mallavartaka),\(^8\) Bāṇamukta, Māṇava, Sakakāpīra, Āṃsika,\(^9\) Puruṣa (probably the same as Puruṣāda),\(^10\) Mālya, Kallivanopānta, Karbūka, Kākṣi, Āgarta,\(^1\) Tāpasa,\(^12\) Māhebhā,\(^13\) Uttamavarṇa,\(^14\) Antapa,\(^15\) Pattana, Bhaṅga, Saitava and Vajrakhaṇḍika.

Among the peoples which cannot even be remotely connected with those of Sircar's list the most significant is Bāṇamukta. We propose to identify them with the Bāṇas, a well known South Indian people who played an important role in the political affairs of the South for quite a few centuries.\(^*\)

\(^{35}\) *Op. cit.*, p. 73.
\(^{36}\) *Loc. cit.*
\(^{38}\) *Loc. cit.*
\(^{39}\) Probably they are the same as Aipika (Sircar, *op. cit.*, p. 79).
\(^{40}\) *Ibid.*, p. 64.
\(^{41}\) It may be a mistake for Ānarta.
\(^{42}\) They may be identified with Tāmasa of Sircar's list (p. 80).
\(^{43}\) It is a mistake for Māheya (*loc. cit.*).
\(^{44}\) It is probably a variant of Uttamavarṇa (*loc. cit.*).
\(^{45}\) It may be a mistake for Anūpa.
\(^{46}\) See *The Classical Age*, ed. Majumdar, pp. 273-74.
Since Jinasena II was a Westerner, the names like Mālya, Kallivanopānta, Kārbūka, and Kāksi, assume a special significance as they are not found in the previous lists. It is reasonable to suppose that these peoples were contemporaneous with our author.*

Among the Madhyadeśa peoples mentioned by Jinasena II, we have the interesting name Moka. It is the variant of Maga, the Sun-worshippers mentioned by Varāhamihira (Ch. 59). Ptolemy’s reference to Brachmanoi Magoi47 proves that the earliest wave of the Persian Sun-worshippers had reached India by the beginning of the Christian era, if not earlier. Since our author places them in Madhyadeśa, it is reasonable to suppose that there grew up slowly a permanent settlement of Zoroastrians in the interior of India.

While enumerating the peoples of the South, the author of the Hariyamśa has not cared to mention peoples living in the Far South. Not a single people living to the South of the Kāveri has been mentioned. Among the northern peoples, a very significant omission is Kāśmīra. This is surprising because the Kāśmīra people under the Kārkota rulers became famous before 783 A.D., the date of the composition of the present work. Among the peoples who are described as Vindhyagṛṣṭha-nivāsanah, we get the name ‘Kiśkandha’ whom we propose to identify with the people living in ancient Kiśkindhā now in the Bhamot District, Rajasthan. The Kiśkindhā-rāṣṭra of Varāhamihira has been identified by Sircar48 with this Kiśkindhā, which was the capital of a branch of the Guhila dynasty which rose to power in the 7th century A.D.49 If we remember the date of Jinasena II, it will not be difficult to account for the mention of Kiśkandha as a people in his work. Jinasena, however, has inadvertently included the Nepālas as living on the Vindhyan.

* [As stated above, their peculiarity is due to wrong reading.—Ed.]
47 See Majumdar, The Classical Accounts of India, p. 375. [See above, p. 108, note.—Ed.]
48 See his The Guhitas of Kiśkindhā, p. 34, note.
49 See also ibid., pp. 60ff.
names given by him are traditional; as for example, the Kuru-
jāngalas of epic fame, who could not have maintained their
existence as late as the 8th century A.D.50

Elsewhere in the same chapter (11. 30-53), Jinasena has
referred to the Mlecchas living near the mouth of the Indus.
We must remember that the conquest of a large part of Sind
by the Muslims was completed by the time our poet wrote his
work (i.e. 783 A.D.). There is little doubt, therefore, that
he has referred to the Arab Muslims settled near the Indus.
But the first ancient Indian writer referring to the
Muslims is Raviśeṇa who completed his famous Jain life of
Rāma, entitled Padma Purāṇa, in 675 A.D. The relevant verse
(27. 14) of that work runs—

Āryadeśāḥ paridhvastā Mlecchaḥ udvāsitam jagat/
ekavarnāṁ praśāṁ sarvāṁ pāpāḥ karturiḥ samudvatabh/

50 [Kuru is mentioned in medieval inscriptions like the Bhagalpur
plate of Nārāyanapāla and the Khajuraho inscription of Dhaṅga.—Ed.] We take this opportunity to reproduce an earlier list of peoples, viz., that
given in the Padma Purāṇa of Raviśeṇa (675 A.D.), another Jain classic—
Subha, Aṅga, Magadha, Vanga. Podana, Lokākṣanagāra Lampāka-visaya,
Bhāṣakuntala, Kālāmbu, Nandīn, Nandana, Siṁhala, Śalabha, Anala,
Caula, Bhīma, Bhūtarava, Purakheja, Majamba, Bhūru, Yavana, Kakṣa,
Cūrū, Trijāta, Naṭa, Śaka, Keral, Nēpāla, Mālava, Aṅula, Śaṅvara. Vṛṣāṇa,
Vaidya-Kāśmira, Hījimba, Avasīta, Barbrā, Trisīra, Pārajāla, Gausīla,
Uśīnara, Śūryāraka. Sanarata, Khaṣa, Vindhya, Śikhāpada. Mekhala, Śūra-
seṇa, Bahlīka, Uūkka, Kosala, Dari, Gāndhāra, Sauvīra. Puri, Kauvea,
Kohara, Andhra, Kāla, Kalinga (101.69, 77-79, 81-84). [Here also there
are many mistakes—Vaidya=Vaidya, Śūryāraka=Śūrapraka, Sanarata=
Anarta, Mekhala=Mekala, etc.—Ed.] Another list given in the Adipyāna
of Jinasena I., a work completed a few years after the Harivamśa is also
reproduced below—Śukosala, Avanti, Pandra, Aśmaka, Ramyaka, Kuru,
Kāśi, Kalinga, Aṅga, Vṛṣāṇa, Sūhama, Saumudraka, Kāśmira, Uśīnara,
Anarta, Vatsa, Pañcāla, Mālava, Daśārtha, Kaccha, Magadha, Vidarbha,
Kuru-jāngala, Karahāpa, Mahārāṣṭra, Surāṣṭra, Abhira, Koṅkana, Vana-
vāsa, Āndhra, Kūṃsara, Kosala, Cula, Keral, Darvābhisāla, Sauvīra,
Śūrasena, Aprāṇa, Videha, Śindha, Gāndhāra, Yavana, Cedi, Pallava,
Kamboja, Ārṣaṭa, Vālhiika, Turaśka, Śaka, Kekaya, (16.152-6). Names of
a few other peoples mentioned elsewhere of the same work are—Madra,
Gauḍa (29.41), Trikaliṅga (29.79), Pāṇḍya, Antara-Pāṇḍya, Kūṭa, Olika,
Mahiṣa, Punnāga, Prātalana, Kamekura (29.79-80).
The above verse shows that Raviṣena heard about the Muslims or knew them personally. The first Muslim invasion of India took place as early as 637 A.D., and between that date and the date of the composition of Padma Purāṇa, i.e. 675 A.D., quite a few Arab raids have been recorded by Muslim chroniclers. So it is not surprising that a West Indian writer should refer to them in a work written in 675 A.D. The expression—ekavaranāḥ prajāṁ sarvāṁ pāpāḥ kartuṁ samudyataḥ shows that Raviṣena had the Muslims in mind when he wrote that verse.\(^{51}\) There is another verse in the same chapter (No. 72) of the Padma Purāṇa which throws more light on the Arab invaders of those days. The verse runs—

\[
nirdayaṁ paśumāṁsādā mūlāhan prāṇi-vadh-odyatāṁ!\]

ārabhya janmanāḥ pāpāḥ sahas-ārambha-kāriṇāḥ\[\]

The verse expresses the character of early Muslim invaders who had no sympathy or respect for non-Muslims. Wherever they went, they carried destruction with them. Non-Muslims were forcibly converted or murdered, their temples were either razed to the ground or converted into mosques, and their women were raped and dishonoured. Raviṣena further describes them as wearing a red head-dress (\textit{rakta-vatra-siras-trāṇāḥ}\(^{52}\)) which is actually the colour of the fez worn by the Muslims.

Besides referring to the Muslims, Jinasena II also gives some other information of historical nature. As early as 1886, B.A. Pathak in the \textit{Indian Antiquary}\(^{53}\) had drawn the attention of scholars to the duration of Gupta rule as recorded by the author of the \textit{Harivamśa}. According to the edition of P.L. Jain published in 1962, the Gupta rule lasted for 221 years (\textit{Guptānāṁ ca ṣuta-dvayam=ekavimśas = ca varṣāni kālaviddhir= udāhtam}).\(^{54}\) But in the manuscript seen by Pathak, instead

\(^{51}\) For further details, see 27.52ff.
\(^{52}\) 27.67.
\(^{53}\) Vol. XV, pp. 141-43.
\(^{54}\) 60.491.
of ekaviśa, it is ekatriṃśa. If we accept Pathak’s reading as correct, then we must accept the fact that Gupta rule in North India ended in 550-51 A.D. This date agrees with what is given in an earlier Jain work entitled Tiloyapaṇṇatti of Yatīvṛśabha (Jadivasaha) which was probably composed in the first half of the 7th century A.D. The relevant line there runs thus—

\[ \text{tato Guttā tānam rāje doṇṇi ya sayāni igitīsā.} \]

But the same work offers another date for Gupta rule in the same chapter. The relevant words run—doṇṇi sadā panaśānā Guttānān (4.1504) which means that the Guptas ruled for 255 years. But it is difficult to believe that the rule of the Imperial Guptas lasted upto 575 (320+255) A.D. The latest record which refers to a Paramabhāyatāraka Mahārājādhirāja Gupta ruler is the Damodarpur copper plate of the Gupta year 224. After this date no Imperial Gupta ruler is known to have assumed such titles. Therefore, year 231 is a more acceptable date than 255 or 221.* Fleet in his editorial note on Pathak’s paper, observes, ‘Jitnasena has hit off pretty accurately the duration of the Gupta power’. 

Some other chronological information given by the author of the Harivaiśa is probably based on the Tiloyapaṇṇatti. In both these works, we are told, that Puṣyamitra ruled for 30 years and Vasumitra and Agnimitra had a total rule of

---

55 See Raychaudhuri in \textit{PHA}1 (6th ed.), pp. 626f. Raychaudhuri is inclined to accept Pathak’s reading.
56 4.1508.
57 *The Gupta-rājya is represented as vartamāna in the Sumanḍala plate of the Gupta year 250 (569 A.D.) when Pṛthivivigrāha was governing the Kaliṅga-rāṣṭra. The tradition of the end of Gupta rule about the Gupta year 255 (574 A.D.) is correct in respect of Orissa since Pṛthivivigrāha’s successor Lokavigrāha issued his Kānasa plate in the Gupta year 280 (599 A.D.) without any reference to Gupta rule. See Jadhunath Sarkar \textit{Vol.}, ed. Gupta, pp. 343ff.; \textit{The Bhārata War and Purānic Genealogies, ed. Sircar}, pp. 147-48.—Ed.]
58 \textit{Ind. Ant.}, Vol. XV, p. 143.
59 \textit{Hariv.}, 60.489 ; \textit{Tiloyapaṇṇatti}, 4.1507.
60 years. The evidence of the Tiloyapannatti and Harivamsa regarding Puṣyamitra is confirmed by Merutuṅga.69

We have already mentioned the fact that, in the colophon of the Harivamsa, Jinasena has given the names of a few important contemporary rulers of India. He has also mentioned the name of king Nanna, who built the temple of Pārśvanātha at Vardhamāna (66. 53). This Nanna should be identified with Mahārāja Nanna (written Nanna) who is described in the Mankani inscription60 as Kaṭaccuri-kula-veśma-pradīpa and is usually assigned to the second half of the 6th century A.D. The inscription discloses the names of Nanna’s queen and son as Daddā and Taralasvāmin. Although Taralasvāmin is represented in that inscription as a Śaiva, his father Nanna, if Jinasena II is to be believed, was a devout Jain.

Our author ridicules the caste-conscious Brāhmaṇas and poses the following question—61

pāpa-pākena daurgatyam saugatyam punya-pākataḥ
jivānām jāyate tatra jāti-garveṇa kim vṛthaḥ?

In several stories he tries to show the superiority of the Jain ascetics over their Brāhmaṇical counterparts.62 He represents Kīcaka63 as embracing Jain religion after his defeat by Bhima. Even Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa is depicted as a devotee of the Jain Tirthankara Neminātha.64 This is exactly what Raviśeṇa says in the Padma Purāṇa where all the principal characters of the Rāmāyaṇa are represented as Jain devotees. Jinasena’s devastating criticism of Vindhyavāsini65 must be noted in this connexion. “Can a goddess who needs so many

---

59 See Ind. Ant., 1914, pp. 118ff.; see also Raychaudhuri, PHAI, p. 391, note 1. [But the 90 years’ rule ascribed to the three Śūrga kings seems to be a fabrication of no value.—Ed.].
60 See The Classical Age, p. 197.
61 43.121.
62 See specially the story of the chustisement of the Brāhmaṇa Somadeva and his two sons by the Jain guru Nandivardhana (43. 29ff.).
63 56.37ff.
64 62.57.
65 See Ch. 49; in this chapter, Jinasena tells a novel story regarding the origin of Vindhyavāsini.
innocent victims”, he asks, “bring salvation to the suffering soul?” His own attitude towards man and world is not far removed from the Vedantic approach. We are quoting below a few lines—

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{jāyate } &= \text{"tra naṭasy } = \text{ eva saṁśāre svāmi-bhṛtyayoḥ\} \\
\text{pitr-putrakayor } &= \text{mātr-bhāryayoś } = \text{ca viparyayah\} \\
\text{ghaṭiyantra-ghaṭī-jāle jaṭīle kuṭile bhāvel} \\
\text{uttarādharyam } &= \text{"āyānti jantavaḥ satata-bhrāmāḥ\} \\
\end{align*}
\]

It is apparent from the Harivamṣa that a majority of the enthusiastic supporters of the Jain religion belonged to the merchant class. We have an interesting reference to a game of gambling in which Vasudeva is represented as having won one crore of hiranyas. There is also a reference to the staging of a play called Mahānanda at Śauryapura.

Sometimes, even devout Jains did not hesitate to patronise Hindu gods. There is the story of a Jain merchant called Kāmadatta who built a temple of Kāmadeva (god of love) at Śrāvasti. There are some other references to the worship of Hindu gods. As for example, in 24. 41-42, we are told of the Indra festival. There is a mention of the worship of the Nāga on the 8th day of the bright fortnight of the month of Māgha.

In spite of the fact that Jinasena has indifference and contempt for the Hindu religion and specially for the Brāhmaṇas, he is not himself immune from the all-pervading influence of Hinduism. We have already referred to the story of Jain Kāmadatta. In the ślokas by which Indra offers tribute to Rṣabhanātha, the first Tīrthaṅkara, we can discern a distinct Vaiṣṇava influence. Even the term bhakti is used there.

---

66 43.126-27.  
67 Cf. the cases of Sumitradatta (27.44), Kāmadatta (29.1ff.), etc.  
68 26.30.  
69 See Ch. 39.  
70 12.61ff.  
71 See Ch. 8.
The author of the Jain Harivamśa, was not only a remarkable poet, but also a highly accomplished personality. His thorough knowledge of the science of music (19.142-261) proves that he was an immensely cultured man. His Harivamśa is one of the most interesting literary creations of the early mediaeval Sanskrit literature.*

* [This paper was received about the close of 1972.—Ed.]
XII

JAINISM AND JAIN RELICS IN BIHAR*

Sarjug Prasad Singh, Centre of Advanced
Study in AIHC, Calcutta University

Bihar's contribution to Indian history and culture is remarkable. Of the sixteen Mahājanapadas or Great States that flourished in the different parts of India during the 6th century B.C., at least three were situated in modern Bihar. These were the kingdoms of Magadha (Patna-Gaya region) and Anga (Monghyr-Bhagalpur region) and the Vṛijī-Licchavi republic in North-Bihar having its capital at Vaiśāli (modern Basādh in the Muzaffarpur District). During this period, Bihar was passing through an era of great religious enthusiasm. The Upāniṣadīc Brāhmaṇas were laying down rules of life in the Dharmaśūtras; Gautama the Buddha was preaching his doctrine of Nirvāṇa in Buddhism; and Mahāvīra Vardhamāna and Maṅkhalīputta Gosāla founded their respective sects of the Jains and Ājīvikas. Of these, Jainism is deeply rooted in Indian culture and is still a living religion of India, while Buddhism, though it has disappeared from the Indian sub-continent,** is even now a dominant force in the religious life of a large number of people of many of the countries of Asia, and the sect of the Ājīvikas has practically disappeared from history. To-day the followers of Jainism in Bihar are insignificant looking to their rich cultural heritage in this part the country.

Bihar was not only the centre of religious activities, but was also the birth place of Mahāvīra, the 24th and last Tīrthaṅkra who was the founder of the Jain Church. Mahāvīra was a scion of the Nāya or Nāta or Jnāṭṛ clan of Vaiśāli.1

* [The article was received about the close of 1972. - Ed.]
** [There are some Buddhists in the eastern fringe of the Indian sub-continent.—Ed.]

1 Hoernle, Uvāsagadāsāo (Bib. Ind.), pp. 3-6. For details see
He was born at Kuchagrama. His father Siddhartha was the Chief (Kulapati) of the said clan and his mother Trisala, also called Vaidehi, Vedehadevi and Videhadattā, was the sister of king Cetaka of Vaisali. The Jain canonical works like the Acārāṅgasūtra, Kalpasūtra and Bhagavatīsūtra preserve the accounts of Mahāvira’s life and they call him Videha, Vaidehadatta, Videhajatya and Videhasukumāra. He was also called Jñataputra, Nāmaputra, Nayaputra or Nātapatra as his father belonged to the family of Nāya or Nāta or Jñat clan. In the Jain Sūtras, Mahāvira is also called Vesālie or Vaiśālika (an inhabitant of Vaiśāli).

According to the Kalpasūtra, Mahāvira lived for 72 years. He died at a place called Majjimā Pāvā (modern Pāvāpurī in the Patna District) in the house of a ruler of the kingdom of Magadha.

Mahāvira spent 30 years of his life as a householder and, after the death of his parents, renounced the world and led a life of austerity and penance wandering in the forests and hilly tracts of South Bihar. At first he joined the order of Parśvanātha and, in the 13th year after his renunciation and initiation as an ascetic, attained supreme knowledge,


2 Acārāṅgasūtra, 389; see also J. C. Jain, Life in Ancient India as depicted in the Jaina Canons, pp. 254, 355.

[This seems to be based on a misreading.—Ed.]


4 Bühl er, Indian Sect of the Jains, p. 27.

called Kevala-jñāna, seated under the shade of a Sāl tree on the bank of the river Rjupālikā at the village called Jambhakagrāma not very far from the Parasnath hills in the modern Hazaribagh District of Bihar. After this event, Mahāvira’s influence spread like wild fire in the countries of Videha, Aṅga and Magadhā. Rājagrha, Campā and Vaiśāli were the chief cities of ancient Bihar and these were the strongholds of Jainism and favourite places of Mahāvira. He spent three pañjusanas (rainy season retirement) at Campā, the capital of the Aṅga country, and its suburbs called Prsthā-Campā, and two pañjusanas at Bhadrika or Bhaddiyā in the same country. Mahāvira also spent 12 pañjusanas at Vaiśāli and Vānijyagrāma in its suburbs, i.e. the modern village of Baniya, about 1½ miles to the north-west of Basādh. Another favourite resort of Mahāvira in Bihar was Mithilā and it must have been a place of considerable importance for the Jains, for Mahāvira spent as many as six monsoons there. In the city of Campā existed the temple called Puṇṇabhadra caitya where Mahāvira resided; at the same place, Suchharman, who was one of the disciples of Mahāvira and succeeded as the head of the Jain order after the death of the master, recited the Uvāsagadasaṇa, the seventh anga of the Jains, while it was governed by Kunika Ajātaśatru of Magadhā. The temple is referred to in the Udbhāsiṭa as Puṇyaalabdha (or Punyatata) caitya. Svaṃabhava, the fifth Parīrcha of the Jain church, who succeeded Prabhava, lived at Campā where he composed, for his son Manaka, the Daśavaikālika-sūtra containing the essence of all the sacred doctrines of Jainism, about the 4th century B.C.\textsuperscript{11} Vasupujya,\textsuperscript{13} the 12th

\vspace{1em}

\textsuperscript{6} Stevenson, op. cit., p. 39; SBE, Vol. XXII, p. 263.
\textsuperscript{7} Law, Mahāvira : His Life and Teachings, p. 7.
\textsuperscript{8} Jacob, Jaina Sūtras, Pt. I, Kalpasūtra, Sec. 122.
\textsuperscript{9} Āvaśyaka Niryukti, 496. [Vānīya = Vaiśāli.—Ed.]
\textsuperscript{10} Stevenson, op. cit., p. 42. [The city of Mithila is located at Janakpur in the Nepalese Tarai.—Ed.]
\textsuperscript{11} Hoernle’s ed., p. 2, notes.
\textsuperscript{*Sic—Ed.}
Tirthaṅkara of the Jains, lived and died in this city and the site of his birth and consecration is marked by a modern Digambara temple which lies in the western fringe of a huge mound called Karnagadh at Nāthnagar, supposed to be the ruins of the ancient city of Campā.

According to the Jain tradition, the place Mahāvira liked best was Rājagṛha, the capital of Magadha. He spent fourteen rainy seasons at Rājagṛha and Nālandā. The former was not only an important centre of Jainism from the time of Mahāvira, but was the birth place of Munisuvrata, one of the predecessors of Mahāvira. Both the Buddhists and Jains claim that kings Bimbisāra and Ajātaśatru favoured their respective doctrines. Both kings figure prominently in the early Buddhist and Jain literature. Bimbisāra (c. 543-491 B.C.), king of Magadha, conquered the kingdom of Aṅga and placed it under prince Ajātaśatru as the Viceroy with Campā as his headquarters. In the Aupapātikasūtra, Ajātaśatru is represented as declaring his faith in Jainism and is described as often approaching Mahāvira at Vaisālī and Campā. Thus the age of Bimbisāra and Ajātaśatru is memorable in the history of Jainism in Bihar. Its echo is found in Jain literature which testifies to its greatness and general prosperity.

Udāyin (c. 452-443 B.C.), son of Ajātaśatru (c. 491-452 B.C.) and the founder of the new city of Pātaliputra, was a devout Jain and a great patron of Jainism. According to the Pariśītāparvan, he built a Jain temple at the centre of Pātaliputra. It appears that, during his reign, Jainism spread rapidly in Bihar, and Pātaliputra became one of the important centres of the Jains. The high status of the Jain monks was recognised and they had access to the king’s palace. It is believed that Udāyin was murdered by a disguised Jain monk.

14 Jambusvāmin, who was the spiritual leader of the Jains for 480 years, was born at Rājagṛha. See Stevenson, op. cit., p. 68. In the Mahīśāsakasūtra of the Majjhimanikāya, the Buddha says that the Jains sever their feet at Rājagṛha on the Vulture Peak, there were four ascetics on the rocks, on the slope of Mt. Isīghi, and one on the rocks, on the rocks, on the rocks, on the rocks. Further Dialogue of Buddha, Vol. 1, London, 1924, Aup. Sū., 1 Par. Par.
There is paucity of evidence to present a clear picture of the state of Jainism during Nanda rule in Bihar, but the removal of the image of the Jina from Kalinga to Pāṭaliputra by the Nanda king of Magadha, seems to suggest his faith in Jainism.\footnote{17}

That Jainism continued to be a popular faith in Bihar during the Mauryan period is known from the association of Candragupta Maurya with the Jains, his migration to Śravaṇa-Belgoj (in Mysore) along with Bhadrabāhu, the last of the Jain Śrutekevalins, in c. 300 B.C., and his death at the place as is generally accepted by scholars. Śhūlabhadra, one of the Jain patriarchs, is known to have convened a Jain council at Pāṭaliputra in the reign of this ruler to settle finally the canonical texts.\footnote{18} Another interesting evidence of the existence of a Jain centre at Pāṭaliputra about the 4th century B.C. is supplied by a beautiful nude image (now in the Patna Museum) discovered at Lohanipur in Patna.\footnote{19} The shining polish of the image shows that it belongs to the Mauryan age.\footnote{20} According to Bhandarkar, Aśoka uses the term Saṃgha while speaking of the Buddhists alone, but Šramaṇa while referring to the Jains as well.\footnote{21} Jainism continued to be a living faith during the time of Aśoka. Sampratī, the grandson of Aśoka, is believed to have been a Jain, being converted to the Śvetāmbara creed by Suhastin, and is said to have sent Jain missionaries to South India. He is said to have built numerous Jain temples.\footnote{22}

\footnote{18} “It is quite in keeping with the tradition that there should be a temple of Śhūlabhadra in the city, which is located in Gulzarbagh ward”, (Altekar and Mishra, \textit{Rep. Kum. Exca.}, 1951-55, p. 10).
\footnote{19} U. P. Shah, \textit{Studies in Jain Art}, Pt. 1, fig. 2.
\footnote{20} Other Jain relics of Mauryan Bihar are a number of caves in the Barabar and Nāgājūnī hills, dedicated by Aśoka and Daśāurvedha to the Ajīvika sect whose leader, Mankhaliputta Gosala, was once a disciple and later a rival of Mahāvīra. See \textit{Bhagavatīśūtra}, XV. 547, 549; also Basham, \textit{History and Doctrine of the Ājīvikas}, pp. 60ff.
\footnote{21} Bhandarkar, Aśoka, pp. 168ff. [Sic—Ed.]
\footnote{22} \textit{Brhatkalpa-bhaṣya}, Vol. III, pp. 917-21, Gathās 3285-89.
The continuity of Jainism at Pāṭaliputra in the 1st-2nd century A.D. is proved by the Tattvārthasūtra of Umāsvāti, which is held in esteem by both the Śvetāmbara and Digambara Jains and was composed in the city towards the beginning of the Christian era. Jainism in this period appears to have attracted the Murunḍas of Patna. The Bhārikalpaśīti refers to a Murunḍa king of Pāṭaliputra, who was a pious Jain and whose widowed sister had also embraced the same faith. The Pāḍalipita-prabandha of the Prabhāvakacarita relates the story how Pāḍalipita cured king Murunḍa of Pāṭaliputra of his terrible headache.

At the time of Hiuen-tsang’s visit (629-645 A.D.), the cities of Pāṭaliputra and Vaiśālī were in ruins. He refers to several hundred Saṅghārāmas at Vaiśālī, which were mostly dilapidated. The followers of the Nirgranthas (Jain ascetics), he says, were numerous. This seems to be the last definite evidence of the existence of Jainism in North Bihar. No antiquity or inscription belonging to the subsequent periods have been found in North Bihar.

The city of Pāṭaliputra appears to have been destroyed about 50 years before Hiuen-tsang’s visit. According to a Jain work called Tilthogali Painīya, king Caturmukha Kakli was persecuting the Jains, and their preceptors advised them to leave Pāṭaliputra; he also predicted that

23 Tattvārthasūtra, Intro., p. 4; cf. Altekar and Mishra, loc. cit.
24 Altekar and Mishra, op. cit., pp. 10f.
26 Beal, Buddhist Records of the Western World, Vol. II, 1934, p. 66. The Jain tradition speaks of the existence of Jain shrines at Vaiśālī. The Uvācagadosāṇo refers to a Jain temple at Kollāga (modern Kolhwa) bearing the name Daupālaṣa. There was a stūpa at Vaiśālī dedicated to Munisuvrata. See the Āvāvakacarī of Jinadāsa (c. 676 A.D.) pp. 223ff., 567.

* [There are some errors here. Probably Tirthodgārīja and Kalki are intended.—Ed.]
there would be catastrophe in the near future. Taking the hint of the forecast, a number of Jain monks left Pātaliputra; but some were still living there. Soon after unprecedented and continuous rains for 17 days in the month of Bhādrapada, the waters of the rivers Ganges and Son rose high and engulfed Pātaliputra from all sides. The latter was terrific and devastating and carried off several monks and laymen of the city by the force of the current of the water and only those who could get the support of wood or boat were saved. This marks the last phase of Jainism at Pātaliputra. Although it was an important administrative centre during Pāla rule over Bihar and Bengal, the evidence of the existence of Jainism is lacking. The excavations at Pātaliputra yielded nothing of any Jain importance of this period.

Jainism suffered a set back during the Gupta-Pāla-Sena rule in Bihar and soon it completely faded out from North Bihar. Notwithstanding the formidable opposition from Brāhmaṇism and Buddhism which gained ascendancy during this period, it maintained its position, but remained confined to the hilly regions of South Bihar. No doubt the Muslim conquest gave the last blow to the tottering edifice of Jainism in Bihar; the subsequent periods witnessed a great revival of this faith and the activity of the Jains during this period was centred at places like Rājgir, Pāvāpure, Bihārsharif, Kuluhā, Pārasnāth and Mandār hills.

We have seen above that the birth place of Mahāvīra, according to the Jain tradition, was Kuṇḍapura or Kuṇḍalāpura. It was also called Khatiya-Kuṇḍāgāma (Āvaśyaka-cūrṇi, p. 243). Hoernle identified it with the modern village

29 A large number of Jain inscriptions dated between Vikrama 1110 (1053 A.D.) and 1938 (1381 A.D.), engraved on stone slabs and images recording the installation of foot prints and images of the Jain Tirthankaras have been found at Rājgir.
30 Tirthakalpa, Chaps. 14 and 21, pp. 8, 41, 282, 287, etc. ; cf. Thakur, op. cit., p. 149.
of Vasukunda, about 3 miles to the north-east of Basāḍh (ancient Vaiśālī) in the Muzaffarpur District.

It may be pointed out in this connection that sometime in 1890, V.A. Smith visited the village of Baniya and is said to have discovered two statues of the Jain Tīrthaṅkaras about 500 yards to the west of the village;¹ but the images were untraceable at the time of Bloch's visit to the village ten years after the former. Thus Bloch writes, "It is a remarkable fact that the modern site of Vaiśālī, the traditional birth place of the last Tīrthaṅkara of the Jains, Vardhamāna Mahāvīra, is entirely devoid of any remains belonging to his religious order".²

Strangely enough there is no archaeological evidence of the existence of old Jain remains in the locality of Vasukunda and it never became a place of pilgrimage for the Jains to rank it with the Pārsnāth hill and Pāvāpuri.³ Except for strong literary evidence, there is nothing to support that Vasukunda was the birth place of Mahāvīra.⁴ Curiously enough, the Jains forgot their real tradition and the location of the birth place of their prophet.

Rājgir, as we have seen above, was the chief centre of Jainism during the life time of Mahāvīra. According to both the Śvetāmbara and Digambara texts Vardhamāna Mahāvīra spent the major part of his life at Rājgir, and his eleven chief disciples called gaṇadharas died there. In the preambles of many of the dialogues of Vardhamāna contained in the Śvetāmbara Jain canon, he is shown as living in the Gunāśila or Guṇa-

---

1. JRAS, 1902, p. 149.
2. ASI, AR, 1903-04, p. 87; Thakur, op. cit., p. 99.
3. The Śvetāmbara text Tīrthamālaśaityavandana (17th century), which gives 76 names of the ancient Jain tīrthas, does not speak of Vaiśālī or Kuṇḍapura (Thakur, op. cit., p. 149).
4. The Digambara Jains identify Kuṇḍapura or Kuṇḍalapura, the traditional birth place of Mahāvīra, with Kuṇḍalpur near Nalanda in the Patna District (K. Bhujabali Šastri, in Jain Siddhānta Bhāskara, Vol. 1), p. 60) and the Śvetāmbaras with the village of Lachwāḍ or Lachuār in the Monghyr District. See Thakur, op. cit., p. 149.
śilaka caitya outside the city of Rājagṛha to the north-east of it. Hemacandra in his Sthavirāvalīcarita also speaks of Guṇīśila caitya in the neighbourhood of Rājagṛha as adorned with a caitya tree. Although memories of the place were always cherished in the Jain tradition connected with the activities of Mahāvira, the earliest Jain remains of Rājgir belong to the pre-Gupta age. The Sonabhāndāra cave belongs to this period. There is an inscription there belonging to the 1st of 2nd century A.D. The epigraph records that Muni Vairadeva, a jewel among teachers and of great lustre, caused to be excavated two caves, fit for the residence of Jain ascetics, with images of Arhats (Jains) installed therein.

Another cave, called 'Vaiśṇava cave', seems also to be a rock-cut Jain shrine.

On the Vaibhāra hill at Rājgir, there is a ruined temple with a central chamber flanked on all sides by a row of cells containing Digambara images of the Gupta age. In another chamber, there is a seated figure of Neminātha with a fragmentary inscription in Gupta characters referring to Candragupta, apparently Candragupta II of the Gupta dynasty. This is the earliest Jain specimen assignable to a fairly accurate date. The pedestal of the image represents a conch shell flanked by the dharmacakra on either side. The interesting feature of the sculpture is the representation of a young prince, standing in front of a wheel which also serves the purpose of the halo. The prince seems to represent Cakrapuruṣa. Three standing figures of the Tirthaṅkaras in other niches bear Kuśāṇa art motifs showing stiffness of their

35 Bhagavatī Sūtra, II, 2, etc.; cf. ASI, AR, 1925-26, p. 121. The site of Guṇasāla caitya lies in the village called Guṇava, eleven miles to the south of Rājgir. The Uttara Purāṇa, a Digambara work by Gunabhadra, who flourished in the south in the 9th century A.D., speaks of the Vipula hill at Rājgir as the permanent place of residence of Mahāvira.
36 1, 29; cf. ASI, AR, 1925-26, p. 122.
37 ASI, AR, 1905-06, pp. 98, 166; ibid., 1936-37, p. 47, Pl. XII, c.
39 U. P. Shah, loc. cit.
shoulders. A fourfold (caulkukha) Jain sculpture from the Sonabhândâra cave and a figure of Ādinâtha with the name of the monk Vasatanandandin inscribed on the pedestal (in characters belonging to about the 8th century A.D.) discovered from the ruined brick shrine on the Vaibhâra hill, are typical examples of the Jain sculptures of Eastern India.  

The Jain texts say that a stûpa was built at Pâvâpuri by the gods who came to attend the death of Mahâvira and a temple was also erected there by king Nandivarâhana. The place was visited by Buchanan, Franklin, Kittoe, Cunningham, Beglar, Broadley and others. Buchanan speaks of a group of temples around two courtyards in the village and refers to a number of inscriptions in them. The earliest of them is dated Vikrama 1605 (1548 A.D.). Bhandarkar’s List (No. 1003) includes only one inscription from Pâvâpuri, which is dated Vikrama 1697 (1640 A.D.). Another inscription of 1641 A.D., recording the restoration of the tûrtha and construction of a temple, is also reported to have been found there. The temple in the tank at Pâvâpuri, called Jalamandira, is obviously a modern one built after Bunchanan’s visit to the place, as his report contains no reference to it.

Although no Jain antiquity of a date earlier than the 16th century has been found at Pâvâpuri, it had been a well established tûrtha by the fourteenth century. Madanakirti (2nd quarter of the 13th century) refers to it (as endowed with

40 Ibid., p. 17, fig. 28. For details see ASI, AR, 1925-26, pp. 125ff.; 1930-34, p. 165f.; Pl. CXXXVIII d; 1935-36, Pl. XVII, I. A four-armed goddess from Nâlandâ, probably representing the Jain Yakṣī Padmâvati, assignable to the 9th or 10th century, is a unique work of art of the East Indian School (U. P. Shah, op. cit., fig. 41).

41 There is a difference of opinion about the location of Pâvâ or Pâpâ or Pâvâpuri. Some identifies it with Kasia in the Gorakhpur District, Uttar Pradesh. See Law, Historical Geography of Ancient India, p. 251.


the image of Śrī-Jina) as one of the twenty-six tīrthas of the Jains of his time. Jina-prabhāṣūrya (1332 A.D.) also describes it in details.

In Bihar there are a number of places of Jain importance and the existence of old Jain shrines, caves, temples, images and inscriptions have been reported from places like Benu-sagar (Singhbhum District), Charra, Chechgaon, Deoli, Dulmi, Pakbira, Palma, Pavanpur, Suissa (Manbhum District, now Dhanbad District), Kuluha and Pārasnāth hills (Hazaribagh District), Cheon, Kauvakol and Nakhaur (Gaya District), Lachhuar (Monghyr District), Dapthu and Bihar (Patna District), Mandār

44 Thakur, op. cit., p. 149.
52 BDG—Manbhum, pp. 266ff.
57 BDG—Gaya, p. 232.
59 ASI, AR, 1903, p. 11; BDG—Monghyr, pp. 210, 228.
61 Ind. Ant., Vol. XXX, p. 69
hills (Bagalpur District), etc. The Pārasnāth hill, named after Pārśvanātha, the 23rd Tīrthaṅkara, who lived and died there, is the highest mountain in South Bihar. Beglar refers to an old Jain temple on the northern slope of the hill called Madhuban and says that it contains numerous sculptured stones of the ancient period.\textsuperscript{63} Bloch, however, says that the oldest remains he saw were a number of foot-prints of various Jain Tīrthaṅkaras, which had been consecrated on the 9th February, 1969.\textsuperscript{64} On the summit of the hill is the main temple enshrining the foot-prints of Pārśvanātha consecrated on the 17th February, 1793; but the temple is of much later date. The large temple on the southern slope of the hill called Jalamanḍira enshrines the modern statues of eight Tīrthaṅkaras. Although the Jain texts speak of very high antiquity of this place, the temples are all of recent dates.

The Mandār hill, the sacred place of the Jains, about 30 miles to the south of Bhagalpur, is associated in Hindu mythology with the famous epico-Purānic story of the Aṁṛta-manthana or the churning of the ocean.* The place was visited by Buchanan, Franklin, Beglar, Bloch, R. B. Bose and R. L. Mitra, etc.

Beglar and Bose refer to a structure on the foot of the hill consisting of a large enclosure, surrounded by a wall built by stones and bricks. According to Bose, the building has a large hall in the centre with an adjoining verandah in front and six dark rooms on the side—only lighted through small apertures in the perforated windows, which are of various devices.\textsuperscript{65} He says that its 'roof was composed of long and spacious marble slabs, supported upon huge stone beams'.


\textsuperscript{63} \textit{ASR}, Vol. XIII, p. 73.

\textsuperscript{64} \textit{ASI, AR}, Bengal Circle, 1902-03, p. 13. See also Hunter, \textit{op. cit.}, Vol. XVI, pp. 216ff.; \textit{BODG}—Hazaribagh, pp. 202ff. [There is an error in the date.—Ed.]

\textsuperscript{65} \textit{Ind. Ant.}, Vol I, pp. 46ff.
Beglar believed that the building belonged to the Śrāvakas or Jains as one of the rooms contained the foot-print of a Tirthaṅkara. The Jain temple on the summit of the hill is of modern date. The general character of the ruins of temples, tanks, images and inscriptions found from the Mandār hill show that it has been a sacred place of both the Jains and the Hindus.

Another important sacred place of the Jains in Bihar in the Kuluha hill, about 6 miles to the south-west of 1 unter-gunj on the Hazaribag District. On the western foot of the hill, Stein noticed a small mound of stones, with a small Jain image of Pārśvanātha with the usual snake-hood canopy over its head. Local people call it Dvārapāla. There are two groups of crude rock-cut sculptures of the Jain Tirthaṅkaras known as Daśāvatāra images, apparently for their number ten in each group. The first group consists of five standing and five seated figures of the Jains. Another group of ten figures of the Jinas, located at a short distance, are all seated and each of them have a female chowri-bearer on either side.

Stein noticed a pair of foot-prints cut into the rocks and considered them to be of the Jain Tirthaṅkaras though the local people believed them to be of Viṣṇu. The inscriptions


67 Ind. Ant., Vol. XXX, pp. 90ff. See also JASB, 1901, pp. 31-37.

68 P. C. Roychoudhury, op. cit., Pl. III. For details about the Kuluha hill, see Hunter, op. cit., Vol. XVI, p. 29; BODG—Hazaribagh, p. 202; P. C. Roychoudhury, op. cit., pp. 40ff. In 1953, Kuluha hill was visited by D. C. Sircar who has published an inscription of the place giving the name of Paramabhaṭṭāraka Mahārājādhirāja Viṣṇugupta whom sciar assigns to the latter Gupta dynasty. [The Later Gupta monarch Viṣṇugupta flourished about the close of the seventh and the beginning of the eighth century A.D.—Ed.]
found on the hill, however, show that some of the ruins would date about the 7th or 8th century A.D.

Another place of importance for the Jains is Gulzarbagh in Patna. There lie two Jain temples near the Gulzarbagh Railway Station. One of these bears an inscription dated Vikrama 1848 (1792 A.D.). The epigraph records that the temple was constructed by the whole congregation living at Pataliputra and was dedicated to Śrī-Sthūlabhadra, referred to above. The temples are built on a high mound concealing some ancient ruins.
XIII

BELIEFS AND PRACTICES IN THE JAIN SUTRAS*

Ramesh Kumar Billorey, Centre of Advanced Study in
AIHC, Calcutta University.

Stray references to folk beliefs and observances, rituals
and festivals, arts and crafts, etc., occur in some of the Jain
Sutras as will be seen below.

A passage in the Sutrakrtanta refers to the practices of
observing vratas and fasts and giving alms to the Sramanas:
“They strictly keep the Posaha fast on the fourteenth and
eighth days of the month, off certain festivals and on full moon
days. They provide the Nirgrantha Sramanas with pure,
acceptable food, drink, dainties and spices, with clothes, alms-
bowls, blankets and brooms, with drugs and medicines, with
stools, planks, beds and conches. They purify themselves by
practising the silavratas and guya-vratas, the virama, the pratyakhyana, the Posaha fasts and austerities which they have
vowed to perform.”1 The Uttaradhyayana Sutra also refers
to the rules of conduct for a householder: “He should never
neglect the Posaha fast in both fortnights, not even for a
single night.”2

Festivals observed in honour of various deities are men-
tioned in the Acaranga Sutra. “A monk or a nun on a beg-
ging tour should not accept food, etc., in the following case:
when in assemblies or during offerings to the manes, or on a
festival of Indra or Skanda or Rudra or Mukunda or demons
or Yakshas or the snakes or a festival in honour of a tomb, a
shrine, a tree, a hill, a cave, a well, a tank, a pond, a river, a
lake, the sea, a mine . . . when on such festivals many Srama-

[This note was received in March, 1973.—Ed.]

[Read ‘couches’ for ‘conches’.—Ed.]

2 Ibid., p. 23. The posatha of the Jains corresponds to the uposatha
of the Buddhists.
tained with food, etc."

Further, it is said, "A monk or a nun should not, for the sake of hearing sounds, go to great festivals where women or men, old, young or middle-aged ones, are well dressed and ornamented, sing, make music, dance, laugh, play, sport, or distribute plenty of food, drink, dainties and spices." In the Kalpa Sūtra, ceremonies associated with the birth are described thus: "The parents of Mahāvīra celebrated the birth of their heir on the first day; on the third day they showed him the Sun and the Moon, on the sixth day they observed the religious vigil; after the eleventh day, when the impure operations and ceremonies connected with the birth of a child had been performed, they arranged a great feast on the twelfth day.... Then they bathed, made offerings [to the house gods] and performed auspicious rites and expiatory acts."

On the eve of the celebration of birth day of the Tirthaṅkara, the king ordered that the town be decorated with variously coloured flags and banners and adorned with painted pavilions, that the walls bear impressions, in Gosīrṣa, fresh red sandal,* of the band with outstretched fingers; the luck-foreboding vases be put on the floor, and pots of the same kind be disposed round every door and arch; that big, round and long garlands, wreaths and festoons be hung low and high; that the town be furnished with offerings... that players, dancers,** wrestlers, boxers, jesters, story-tellers, ballad-singers, actors, messengers, pole-dancers, fruit-mongers, bag-pipers, lute-players and many Tālacaras be present."

The Sūtrakṛtāṅga refers to the study of astrology, the art of interpreting dreams, divination from diagrams, augury,

3 Ibid., Part I (SBF, Vol. XXII), p. 92. [The quotation is not quite accurate.—Ed.]
4 Ibid., p. 185.
5 Ibid., pp. 254-55. [The quotation is not quite accurate.—Ed.]
6 According to the commentary, this may also be translated as ‘smeared with cow dung and whitewashed’ (ibid., p. 252, note 2).

*The original has gosīrṣa and dardara. The latter is explained by Jacobi as ‘sandal brought from Dardara’.—Ed.]

**The reference to ‘rope-dancers’ is carelessly omitted from here.—Ed.
7 Ibid., pp. 252-53.
bodily marks, portents, and omens. In the same Sūtra, we are told: “Some men...study various evil sciences, viz. [the divination] from terrestrial accidents, from strange phenomena (e.g., the laughing of monkeys), from dreams, from phenomena in the air, from changes in the body, from sounds, from mystical science” (laksāna, such as, svastika, etc.), from seeds (sesamum, beans, etc.); [the interpretation of] the marks of women, men, elephants, cows, partridges, cocks, ducks, quails, of wheels, parasols, shields, sticks, swords, precious stones, jewels; the art to make one happy or miserable, to make a woman pregnant, to deprive one of his wits; incantations, conjuring (indrajaśa), oblations of substances, the martial arts, the course of the Moon, the Sun, Venus and Jupiter, the falling of meteors; great conflagration; divination from wild animals, the flight of crows, showers of dust, rain of blood, the vaitāli and ardhavaitāli arts, the art of casting people asleep, of opening doors, the art of Cāndālas, of Šabarās, of Dravidas, of Kaliṅgas, of Gauḍas and of Gāndhāras; the spell for making somebody fall down, rise, yawn; for making him immovable or cling to something; for making him sick, or sound; for making somebody go forth, disappear (or come).” Such practices are not approved by the author of the text: “They practice a wrong science, the unworthy, the mistaken men.” Elsewhere it is said, “The stupid sinners... go to hell through their superstitious beliefs.”

And again, “Perfection is not attained by ablutions or tending a fire.” Reference occurs in the Śūtrakṛtāṅga to auspicious rites and expiatory acts for counteracting bad dreams, making an offering to the house gods, the prac-

8 Ibid., Part II, p. 317.
9 [Read ‘signs’.—Ed.]
10 Ibid., p. 367.
11 Ibid., Part I, p. 33.
12 Ibid., Part II, pp. 294-95.
13 Ibid., p. 371.
14 Loc. cit.
tice of adorning the floor with auspicious figures, the vow of silence, first portion of the meal being thrown away in honour of the gods, the precautions regarding food, etc., taken by the pregnant women, and burying the treasures in the wells or house walls. The text also refers to beliefs in merits acquired in previous life, pilgrimage, cycle of births, moksha (deliverance), effect of karman, heaven and hell, etc. The Acaranga Sutra refers to the slaying of animals for sacrificial purpose, festivals preceded or followed by a feast or entertainment and wedding and funeral dinner. In the Kalpa Sutra, we are told that Trişalā, in order to save her auspicious dreams from being counteracted by other bad dreams, remained awake by means of [hearing] good, auspicious, pious, agreeable stories about gods and religious men. King Siddhartha summoned the interpreters of dreams who well knew the science of prognostics. The Uttarādiḥayayana Sutra mentions four kinds of gods, viz. (1) Bhavanavāsin—Asura, Nāga, Suvarṇa, Vidyut, Agni, Dvipa, Uadhi, Vāta, and Ghanika (Kumāras); (2) Vyantara—Piṣāca, Bhūta, Yakṣa, Rākṣasa, Kiṃnara, Kiṃpuruṣa, Mahoraga, and Gandharva;

16 Ibid., Part II, p. 321.
18 Ibid., p. 250.
19 Ibid., p. 248.
20 Ibid., Part II, p. 62.
21 Ibid., pp. 279-86.
22 Ibid., Part I, p. 12.
23 Ibid., pp. 94-97.
24 The auspicious dreams of Triśalā related to the following—an elephant possessing all lucky marks, a bull, alion, Śrī the goddess of beauty, a garland, the moon, the sun, a flag, a vase full of water, a lake, the milk ocean, a celestial abode, a heap of jewels, and fire (ibid., pp. 231-38).
25 Ibid., p. 240.
26 Ibid., pp. 245-46.
*They are Asura-kumāra, Nāga-kumāra, etc.—Ed.]
(3) Jyotiska—the Moon, the stars,* the nakṣatras, the planets, and the host of stars; (4) Vaimānika who are of two kinds: those who are born in the heavenly kalpas and those who are born in the regions above them.

Reference also occurs to various folk arts and crafts which, however, is beyond the scope of this paper.

*[Read 'the moons, the suns'.—Ed.]*
INDEX

Abhicandra 105
Abhimanyu 106
Abhirā 107, 112n
Acala 106
Ācārāṅgasūra 73, 81, 119, 122, 135
Ācāraprakāśa 80n
Ačārya, N. N. 1
Acyutarāya 68
Adharmāstikāya 31, 34
Ādinaṭa 3, 29, 46, 48, 66, 68-69, 127
Ādipurāṇa 100n, 109, 112n
Āditya I 60, 62
Ādityasena 71
Āgarta 107, 108n, 110
Agideva 105
Agni 135
Agnimitra 114
Agrawala, R. C. 10
Agrawala, V. S. 40n
Āhirnā 38
Ākirvata 16-17
Aśīka 108n, 110n
Aśvaramalai 66
Ājatasatru 120, 121
Ājitanāṭha 11
Ālīva 33
Ālīvika 118
Ājānandai 66
Ājja-Ropana 44
Ājunā 105
Akalarika 56, 59
Aksayatityā 29
Āksobhya 105
Alagiyapallavan 65
Alexander 96
Ālipadaitāṅgi 59
Amarābharaṇa-Siyagaṅgan 66
Āmbela 27
Āṁkura 105
Āmohini 40
Āṁśika 107, 108n, 110
Āmūr 70
Ānaimalai 66
Ānala 112n
Ānandāṅgalam 62
Ānanta 108n, 110n, 112n
Ānandaviṣyā-Vāmanan 64
Āpāṇa 61
Andhakavēpku, Andhakavṛṣṇi 105
Andhra 112n
Āndhradesa 52
Ānekāntavāda 34
Āṅga 118, 120
Āṅgāraka 107, 108n
Āṅgāravati 102
Āṅgavijā 7
Āṅguyaka 108n
Antapa 108 and n, 110
Ānūpa 108n, 110n
Āparāntaka 112n
Āparigraha 38 & n
Āpastamba 7
Appāṇḍar temple 63, 65, 68
Appar 52, 53 & n
Ārāmbla-nandi 64
Ārāṇāṭha 36n
Āruba 108n
Arco District, South 46-47, 62-66, 59
Arhat 26, 38-39
Ārīṣṭanemi 22, 37; Āpiṇārā 47, 67
Ārāmala 67
Āṟṟākkan 69
Arthasastra 103
Ārthikanyā 31
Āṟṟula 112n
Āṟṟya 23; Bhvista 43; Četiya 43;
Data 44; Ḥattakiya 44; Nagabhutiya 44; Nandika 44;
RELIGION AND CULTURE OF THE JAINS

Odehikliya 44; Simhagiri 82; Suhastin 82
Āryaka 40
Āryapurnapakkam 69
Āryarakṣita 82
Āryasūnu 106
Āryavatī 40
Āryaverti 42 & n
Ashrafpur plates 108-09,
Āsāmakā 107, 112n
Āṣṭeya 38
Āstika 30
Asura 135
Ātreya 107
Āttimallā 66
Aupapātika Sūtra 121
Āvantā 108n
Āvantī 71, 112n
Āvarta 108 and n
Avasarpīpi 18, 22
Avaśā 112n
Avaśyakacūrṇi 23n, 124
Avaśyakanirvukti 82
Avaśyakasūtra 17
Avatāravāda 2, 19
Āvṛṣṭa 107, 108n, 110
Āyagapāṇa 39
Āyagasabhā 40
Āyurveda 91n
Ayyangar, M. S. Ramaswamy 59n
Ayyar, K. R. Venkatarana, 50n
Bāblika 107, 112n
Bājpeyi, K. I. 36
Baladeva 93 & n, 105
Balākapācca
Bāna 77, 107
Bāparukta 107, 108n, 110
Bāndopadhyay, S. 1, 5, 7
Banerji, R. D. 108n
Baniya 120, 125
Bappabhattacarita 96
Barbara 112n
Barnett 101

Bāsdh 118
Beglar 129-20
Benusagar 128
Bhadrā 108
Bhādrabhāvī Samhitā 73, 80-81, 84, 90
Bhadrabhāhu I 4-5, 71-74, 76, 78, 86,
90-91, 122; II 79n, 81, 84; III 84
Bhadrabhāhu-nimitta 85, 92
Bhadrabhāhu-nimittakāstra 85, 92
Bhadrabhāhusamhitā 4, 85 & n, 86, 87n.
88, 89 & n, 90-91, 94-95
Bhadragnāta 82
Bhadrakāli 93 & n
Bhadraśāli 93n
Bhagalpur 112n
Bhāgavata Purāṇa 9
Bhāgavatāsūtra 119, 1260
Bhaktibhāgavata 98
Bhāngā 108, 110
Bhartadvīja 107
Bhārata 16-17
Bhāratavarṣa 17
Bhārgava 207
Bharukaccha 108
Bhāṣakuntala 112n
Bhāskarvarman 107
Bhattacharya, A. K. 6
Bhattacharya, B. C. 38n
Bhattacharya, P. K. I
Bhattacharya, R. K. 1, 3, 9, 30-32
Bhattasali, N. K. 108
Bhava-nandi 66
Bhavanavāsin 18, 35
Bhūlamāla 99
Bhīma 104, 112n, 115
Bhīmānil 99
Bhogavardhana 107
Bhombat District 111
Bhuilīta 108n, 110
Bhūta 135
Bhūtaraya 112n
Bihar 13, 118, 124, 128
INDEX

Billore, R.K. 132-35
Bimbisara 85n, 121
Boghaz-Koeki 106n
Bomma-nayaka 69
Brachmanoi Magoi 111
Brahmacarya 38
Brahmadeśam 69
Brahmajīva 82
Brahmaliptaka 43n
Brahman 91n
Bṛhadāyārā 71n
Bṛhadāyātaka 71n
Bṛhadāyāvatāra 80n
Bṛhatkalpasūtra 123
Bṛhatkathā 3-4, 102
Bṛhatsthānīkītā 4, 71n
Buchanan 127 & n
Buddha 98, 106, 118
Bühler 44n
Bukkarāya 67
Cakramallur 69
Campā 120-21
Candella 98
Candra 93
Candradeva 105
Candragupta Maurya 76, 85-86, 97
Candranandācārya 60
Candraprabha temple 55, 65
Cānūra 102
Cāpotkāṭa clan 97n
Caritādharma 31
Cāru 112n
Cārvaka 30
Caturmukha-Kakli 123n
Caturvarṇa Saṅgha 42
Caturviṁśasastoma 2
Catuvṛti 2
Catuvṛtí 3, 46
Cauḷa 112n
Cauḷukya dynasty 9
Cedi 112n
Cedirāya 65
Cēra 51, 56
Chakravarti, A. K. 6
Champakalakshmi, R. 6, 46, 50-70
Charra 128
Chatterjee, A. K. 1, 3, 4, 7, 100-17
Cheechgaon 128
Chedasātra 81
Cheon 128
Cheyur 46
Chingleput District 3, 46, 61-62, 69
Chinā 7; 8-patta 7
Cittamur 54-55, 62, 64, 70
Coimbatore 47
Coja 51-52, 54-56, 62
Cūḍāmaninīkāṇḍu 68
Cuddalore 52
Cūḷadukkhakandhasutta 121
Cūḷahimavat 16
Cunningham 41, 98n
Curtius 96
Dādapuram 63
Daddā 115
Dāka-Malla 109
Dakṣināparha 73
Dāṅguka 108n
Dāṇḍika 107, 108n
Dāpethu 128
Dāri 112n
Dārvābhīsara 112n
Das, S. R. 3-5, 8, 107
Dasārṇaka 108
Daśāśrūtasākandhasūtra 73, 80n, 83
Daśavākāliikasūtra 73, 120
Daśavatāra image 130
Daśerā 29
Daśeruka 107, 108n
Dasgupta, K. K. 7
Deoli 128
Desai, P. B. 50n, 52 & n, 55n, 69
Deśavallabha-jinaśayā 69
Devanandā 40
Devapārmaśāla 46
Devi, S. M. 1
Gaṇadīnābād District 128
Dhaṅga 112n
Dhanus 8
Dhauvantari 93
Dhānāliṅga 54
Dhārāpa 105
Dharmapāla 4, 109-10
Dharmaśāstra 9n
Dharmasena 53
Dharmasūtra 118
Dharmāstikāya 31, 34
Dhātaki-khaṇḍa 17
Dhavāla 75
Dhūmaprabhā 17
Dhāvāja 8
Digambara 5-6, 26-27, 38, 50, 76, 78, 83
Digambara Pāṭāvali 81
Dīkṣā-vṛksa 23
Dimitra 45
Dīṃḍiraja-Karka 97
Divālī 28
Dostāṭaka 100
Dottāḍa 100
Draupadi 104 ; temple 66
Dravida Saṅgha 52n, 58
Dronācārya 81
Dukūla 7
Dulmi 128
Durga 107
Durgadas 101n, 102n
Durvīnīta 59
Dvārakā 102
Dvārapāla 130
Dvīpā 135
Ekalavimāna 48
Elācārya 56, 57 & n
Emmānkoṭīl 70
Fleet, J. F. 79n
Gahāḍavāla 98
Gana 8, 42 & n
Gāndharādittapperumpallictī 63
Gāndharāditya 62
Gandhamādana 17
Gāndhāra 107, 112n
Gandhi, Virchand 30, 32
Ganga 54, 66
Gangā 16
Gangārādevī 67
Gangā-Pallava 61
Gāngasūrappperumpallī 63
Gāngayadeva Vikramaditya 98
Gauṇī 45
Garga 91n
Gauḍa 107
Gauśīla 112n
Gaya District 128
Gandharva 135
Ghāṇīka 135
Ghāṭa Jātaka 105
Ghāṭa-paṇḍita 105
Girnar 100
Godāvari 3
Gomatesvara 28
Gonda 13
Gopal, L. 99n
Gopāla (Krṣṇa) 98
Gopalan, R. 52
Gopani, A. S. 89
Gorakhpur District 127n
Guhila dynasty 111
Gujarat 97, 99, 101 & n
Gulzarbagh 122, 131
Gūṇabhara 53-54
Gūṇabhadra 68
Gūṇadaraviccaram 53-54
Gūṇāḍhya 3-5, 102 & n
Gūṇāḍlaka-caitya, Gūṇāḍlaka-caitya
   125, 126 & n
Gūṇava 126n
Gūṇavirabhāṣa 62
Gūṇavrata 132
Haimavata 16
Hairanyavat 16
Hamsaraj, H. 85n
Harappan 106n
Haribhadra 9, 16, 97-99
Harinegami 40
INDEX

Harisendra 78
Hariṣena 101
Haritamalakadhi 43
Harttvanaka 3-4, 23, 100, 101n, 102-03, 105-06, 111, 112n, 113-17; Purana 109-10
Harivarsa 16
Hasta 8
Hastimalla 66
Hastinapura 29, 104, 106
Hathigumpha inscription 39
Hatiakakiya 43
Hazaribag District 3, 120, 128, 130
Helacarya
Hemacandra 76, 96, 126
Hidimba 112n
Himaśataka 59-60
Himavat 16, 105
Hiuen-tsong 55, 107, 123
Hora 71
Hosakote plates 53 & n
Huntergunge 3, 9
Iśvarakula-kula 23
Iśayapadārā 50
Iśayārappanandi 61
Indra 93; festival 116
Indrāpi 93
Indrāyudha 100, 109
Indus 5, 112
Irvikulasundarapperumpalli 64-frugappa 67
Isigili 121n
I-tsing 109
Iyengar, M. Raghava 68n
Jacobi, H. 44n, 79n, 132n
Jaḍivasāti 103
Jain, H. L. 103n
Jain, P. L. 101n
Jalamandir 127, 129
Jāmadagnya 93
Jambai 68
Jambudipapanaṇṭi 16
Jambudipapanaṇṭitaśāṅgahā 15n, 16

Jambudīpasamāsa 16
Jambudvipa 16; Bharata 22;

Jana 16
Janaka 106n
Jara 105
Jarāsandha 104
Jaratkumāra 105
Jayadhavala 75
Jayadratha 104
Jayāpiṇḍa Vinayāditya 99
Jayavarāha 100n
Jina 16, 38
Jinacandra 97
Jinādiyāra 61
Jinagiripallī 62
Jina-Kāṇci 53, 55, 57-58, 68
Jinaprabha 36
Jinaprabhāṣūri 128
Jinasena 3, 104, 105 & n, 107, 109, 112, 114, 115 & n
Jinasena I 112n
Jinasena II 106 & n, 102-06, 109-11, 113, 115
Jiva 33
Jivadeva 98
Jvakaṁāra 55
Jāuṇa Paṁcami 27
Jñātapatra 119
Jñātṛ clan 118
Jodhpur 99
Jyāmbhakagrama 120
Jvālāmālini 68
Kadamba 8
Kādava 54; Ṛayā 55, 65
Kadungon 51
Kākeya 107
Kakṣa 112n
Kāki 107
Kala 112n
Kalabhra 51 & n
Kālakācārya 82
Kalatoya 108n
Kālāmbu 112n
Kālhana 8
Kalidāsa 104
Kalinga 39, 107, 112n, 122
Kalinga-rāṣṭra 114n
Kalingasena 102
Kallivanopānta 107, 108n, 110-11
Kalpasūtra 26, 40, 42 & n, 43 & n, 44, 73, 79n, 119, 133, 135
Kalyāṇakāṣṭaka 77
Kānadaśa 116 & n
Kānadeva 116
Kāmboja 107
Kampavaranā 61
Kāṁśa 102
Kanakavirakutati 62
Kanaṇī 77, 96, 100 & n
Kāṇci, Kāñcipuram 48, 51n, 54, 56-58, 60
Kandi 59
Kaniska 42
Kanīyavika 43
Kāñkālīlā 36, 37n
Kannaradeva, Prthvigaṇarāyaṇa 66
Kapya 103
Kānyakubja 77, 97
Kāpīṭhaka 71
Karaṇātha 112n
Karaṇḍai 59, 64-65, 68
Karbūka 107
Karīgai 56
Kārkotā 111
Karnagadhi 121
Karṇaśayanā 4, 107
Karṇāṭaka 56-57, 69
Karūṅgalakkudi 66
Karuppankuvru 3, 46, 61
Kaśākkuṭi plates 51n
Kaśi 107, 112n
Kāśa 127n
Kāśmirā 111
Kaśyapa 91n
Kathacurī-kulavēśa-pradīpa 115
Kathakoṣa 100-01
Kathāsaṃsāgara 3-5, 101, 102n, 104n
Kathmara 27
Kāṭāmpallī 64
Kauśāyati hill 3
Kausāla 108
Kauśāyī 107
Kauśāmbrī 104
Kauṭika-gāpa 43
Kauvaka 128
Kauvēra 112n
Kāverī 111
Kāyotsarga 23; posture 48
Kenyā, L. B. 1, 3, 6-8, 10-14
Kerala 112n
Kevalajñāna 23
Kevalin 38, 75
Khaḍga 4, 107-08
Khaṭgodyama 109
Khaṭjuraḥa 112n
Khāravela 39
Khāṣa 112n
Kicaka 104, 115
Kimpurīsa 135
Kinnāra 135
Kīrappākkam 69
Kīrāṭa-visaya 109
Kīskandha, Kīskindha 108, 111
Kohara 112n
Kolabana 108n
Koliyānū 69
Kollāga 123n
Kōṅgar Puliyāṅgulam 66
Kongu region 50
Kosikāpa 112n
Kopperuṅjīga 65
Korraṁāṅgalam 66
Kosaḷa 88n, 107, 112n
Koṭṭiya-gāpa 42-43
Krishna Rao, M. V. 56n
Krṣṇa 24, 98, 100, 102, 104-05
INDEX

Krṣṇa III 66
Krṣṇadevarāya 68
Kṣāmārasana 80n
Kṣauna 7
Kṣemakirti 81
Kūbera 37
Kula 8, 42 & n
Kulaśekharadeva 63
Kulottuṅga I 64
Kulottuṅga III 66
Kuluha 124, 128
Kulya 108
Kumāra 101
Kumārapāla 99
Kumili-gaṇa 69
Kundagrāma 118
Kundakunda 57, 79; ącārya 56
Kundalapura 124-25
Kundapura 124-25
Kundavai 63; ąjinaṅyaya 63
Kunjān 107, 108n, 110
Kunmatṭūr 68
Kunrāi 68
Kuntala 107
Kumṭunātha 64; temple 65
Kunti 108n
Kural 51, 56
Kuraṇḍi 62
Kuru 112n; ąjāṅgala 107
Kuśa 108
Kuśagra 107, 108n, 110
Kuṭa 112n
Kvāthatoya 107, 108n, 110
Laebchuar 128
Laghujaṭaka 71n
Laḥiri, A. N. 1-2, 6, 19-24
Laḥiri, B. 1
Laḵṣmi 97-98
Lalitaṅkura-Pallavaśvaragṛha 54
Lampāka-vaśyaya 112n
Lādchesana 23
Laṭārāja-Viracola 63
Lavanaprasāda 10
Lekhāpadhāti 99 & n
Lohanipur 39, 122
Lokāksanagara 112n
Lokavigraba 114n
Mackenzie manuscript 59 & n, 70
Madanakirti 126
Madhyadesa 107, 111
Madhyamikā 43n
Madraka 107
Madrakāra 107
Madura, Madurai 47-48, 51, 55, 57-
58, 66, 69; Tirunelveli 50, 105
Madurantakam 3, 46
Maga 5, 71, 111; Brāhmaṇa 5
Magadha 85-86, 107, 112n, 118, 120-21
Māgaral 69
Māharākṣita 36
Mahābādrata 102-03
Mahābhīnavat 16
Mahāksatrāpa 40
Mahalingam, T. V. 51n, 59n
Mahānanda 116
Mahānīṣṭha 80n
Mahārāstra 112n
Mahātamanāḥprabhā 17
Mahāvideha 16
Mahāvīra 2-3, 13, 21-23, 25, 27-29,
37-39, 41, 46, 54, 62, 76, 118-19,
127, 133
Mahāvīrajayanti 27
Mahendramangalam 67
Mahendravarman I 52-53, 54 & n
Māheya 108n, 110n
Mahāsa 112n
Māhiṣaka 107
Mahoraga 135
Maitra, J. 1
Majjhīmanikāya 121n
Majjimā-Pāvā 119
Majumdar, A. K. 97n
Majumdar, R.C. 78, 100n, 105n, 110n
Mākandi 104
Malada 107
Maladhāri-Hemacandra 81
Mālava 112n
Malayagiri 80n, 81
Malayasmīka 98
Malla 4, 100n, 107
Malladēsa 109
Mallaka 108n
Malvania, Dalsukh 91
Mālyavat 17
Māmallapuram 46, 48-49
Māmanḍūr 47, 50
Mānasavega 102
Mānav 107
Mānavartika 107, 110
Manbhum 9, 128
Māndalapuruṣa 68
Mandra 16, 124, 128-30
Mānimekalai 51
Mānkuni inscription 115
Mānkaliputta Gōsāla 118
Māravarman-Vikramapāṇḍya 66
Marudevi 104
Mastaka 107
Maṭamba 112n
Māthurā 35, 37 & n. 42, 104; inscription 97
Maṭavilasapradhāsana 54 & n
Mauna-Ekādaśi, Maunagārāsa 28
Māya 91n
Mayilāppūr 51
Meghacandra 78
Mēhika 44
Mekala 112n
Meru 16-18
Mēruttunga 4, 75-77, 84n, 86, 94-96, 115
Mishra, B. P. 7
Mithilā 120
Mohenjodaro 106n
Moka 107, 108n, 111
Monghyr District 128
Monghyr-Bhagalpur region 118
Mūka 108n
Mukunda 132
Mūlaka 107
Mūlarāja I 97 and n, 98-99
Mūlarāja II 97
Mūnda 13
Munisuvrata 23, 121
Muruṇḍa 123
Muṣṭika 102
Muzaffarpur District 119, 125
Mylapore 51
Nāḍīka 43
Nāga 13, 18, 135
Nāga-nandin 61
Nāgaratikāraka 48
Nagawam, R. 50n
Naiṣadha 108
Nakhur 128
Nālandā 127n
Nāmaputra 119
Nāminātha 22
Nanda 75
Nandana 112n
Nander 3
Nandin 112n
Nandi-saṅgha 79
Nandivardhana 115n, 127
Nandivarman II 55, 60-61, 105
Nandivāsāla 41
Nandīyārīta 36n
Nanna 100, 115
Nannūl 55-56
Nārada 103
Narasiṁhachar, A. 58n, 59
Naravahanadatta 1-2
Nārāyanapāla 112n
Nārpatnamyaparumpallī 65
Nāsārika 107, 108n
Nāsīkya 108n
Nāṭika 30
Nātā 112n
Nāṭa clan 118
Nāṭaputra 119
Navapadāpūjā 26
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Place Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Paṭṭinikkurattiaḍīgaḷ</td>
<td>47, 62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paṇḍra</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pavanpur</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pāvāpuri 124-25, 127 &amp; n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Penzer 101n, 106n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Periya Purāṇam 2, 48, 53-54</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perumāṇḍūr 61-62, 64, 68</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perunēkathai 55</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petapurtraka, Petapurtrika</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petivamika 43-44</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phalgurakṣita 82</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piṅḍaniṇyukti 82</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piśāca 135</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Podana 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ponnināṭha temple</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ponnīyakkīyār 61</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ponnūr 66, 68</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pontagai</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Porwal community</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Posaha 132</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prabandhakāśanīmanī 71-74, 75 &amp; n, 77n, 80n, 86n, 90, 96n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prabandhakoṣa 73-74, 75 &amp; n, 77, 80n, 86n, 90, 94-95</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pradyota</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pradyumna</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prāgjiyotisa 107</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prāgyāṭa community 97 &amp; n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prasenajit 85n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prasnavahanaka 43n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prāsthala 107, 108n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prātana 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pratāparudra 98</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prathala 108n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pratikarma 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pratisthāna, Pratisthānapura 73-74</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pratyākhyāna 132</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pravaka 101n, 108, 110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pravāṅga 108n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prātha-Campā 120</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prthivivigraha 114n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ptolemy 5, 111</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pudukkaliṇi 70</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pudukkottai 55</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pūjyāpāda 56, 58, 60</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pujal 70</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pulcyā 108n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pūṇḍi 65</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pundra 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Punnabhadracaitya 120</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Punnāga 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pūṇyalabdha 120</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pūṇyatāva 120</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pūṇyavijaya 91n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Purakkheja 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puri 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puri, B. N. 44n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puruṣa 107, 108n, 110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pusalker, A. D. 78n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puṣkara-dvipa 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puṣkarāda 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puṣpasena 67</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puṣyabhūti 77</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puṣyamitra 115</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājabhaṭa 109</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājagṛha 27, 85-86, 103, 120-21, 126</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājamallī 66</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājaprasāda 36</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājarāja I 55, 61, 63 ; II 64 ; III 64</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājaśekharasūri 4, 72, 74, 76, 84n, 86, 94-95</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājasiṅga 55</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rajasthan 99, 111</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājatarangini 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājavālikathē 58</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājendrā 63</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rājgar 124 &amp; n, 125, 126 &amp; n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raksābandhana 29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rākṣasa 135</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rāma 93, 106n, 112</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ramachandran, T. N. 55n, 56n, 57n, 64n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rāmāyana 115</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ramanathapuram 55</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rāmīyaka 16, 112n</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raṇādītya 8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Rāṣṭrakūṭa dynasty 50, 66, 100
Ravijena 112 and n, 113, 115
Ray, H. C. 97 n
Rāychaudhuri, H. C. 106 & n, 109n
Rewa inscription 98
Rice, B. L. 59
Rjupālīka 120
Rṣabha, Rṣabhadeva, Rṣabhānātha 9, 11, 21, 23, 66, 68, 70, 116
Rṣibhāṣīta 73
Rṣi-samudāya 64
Rudra 93, 132
Rudradāsa 41
Rukmin 16
Rūpya 16
Śādhu 26, 28
Śādhu 25
Saha, K. 1, 6; 25-29
Sabasānīka 106
Saitava 108, 110
Śaka 112n
Śakākāpta 107, 110
Śakāṭāla 72
Śākta 8, 42 & n
Śaktideva 101
Śalabha 112n
Śālākāpurusa 2
Saleore, R. A. 56n, 57n, 58n, 66n
Śālavāhana 77
Śalukki 63
Śāluva-Narasimha 68
Sāliva 107
Samataṭa 108
Sambandar 53
Sama-caturasra-kūṭa 48
Samantabhadrā 56-58
Samāsasamhīta 71n
Sambhoga 42
Sambhūti-vijaya 73-75
Sambhuvarāya 64-65
Sametasākhara 23
Sampratī 122
Samita 82
Samudravijaya 105
Sanatkumāraracita 97
Sangam works 51
Sanghādāsagarpa 80n
Sanhitā-manḍapa 67
Śāddhiya 33
Śāntinātha 37, 100
Śānti-sūri 81-82
Sarasvatī 41
Sārasvata 107
Sārasvata-vyākarana 78
Sārasvati-gaccha 79
Sarkar, Jadunath 96n, 114n
Śarkarāprabhā 17
Śarvanandī 52
Śarvara 112n
Śarvatobhadrikapratīma 39
Śarvarman 5, 78
Śāśānīka 107
Śastri, K. A. Nilakanta 54, 84n
Śātvāhana 77
Śatānīka 106
Śaptapāśikā 71
Śatrujit 73
Śatruṇija 27
Śāttamangalam 55, 61
Satya 38
Śauryapura 116
Sauvārī 107, 112n
Śedārampāṭṭu 69
Sen, B. C. 105n
Sengupta, S. 1, 5, 15-19
Shah, U. P. 10, 37n, 41, 127n
Śastri, A. M. 1-2, 4-5, 7, 9, 71-93
Śastri, Nemi Chandra 85, 89n
Śiddha 28, 38
Śiddhacakra 27, 4pūjā 26
Śiddhārtha 119
Śiddhāyikā 61
Śīkha 112n
Śīkharin 16
Śīlāṅka 81 & n
Śilāpaṭa 40
Silappadikāram 51
Silavata 132
Silpaśāstra 91n
Simhala 112n
Simhanandikkuravaḍigañj 61
Simhavarmana 52-53
Simhavīgma 51 & n, 53
Sindhu 107
Śīnganikkappam 69
Singh, S. P. 1, 8-9, 118-31
Singbhum 9, 128
Sircar, D. C. 1-6, 8-9, 52n, 77n, 96, 98n, 108n, 110 & n, 111
Śīruvākkam 69
Śītā 106n
Śītalasātama 29
Śivakoti 58
Śivakumāra 56
Śkanda 132
Solañki dynasty 97
Solvandīpuram 52
Somadeva 3, 101, 102 & n, 104, 106
Smith 98n, 99n
Śrāvaka 25, 130
Śrāvakī 25
Śravaṇa Beḷgola 50, 56-57, 59, 67, 122
Śrī 93, 135n
Śrīcandra 97
Śrīgṛhī 43
Śrīgupta 43
Śrī-Jina 128
Śrīkaraṇaperumpalli 69
Śrīmāla 99
Śrī-Sthūlabhadra 131
Śrīvaiṣṇava 68
Śrīvallabha 100
Śrīvāstava, B. 1
Śrutadharman 31
Śrutakevalin Bhadrabāhu 4, 6, 60, 78, 83
Stevenson 7, 11
Sthānikiya 42
Sthāvravaličarita 96, 126

Sthūlabhadra 74-76, 122
Sthimitasāgara 105
Subramaniam, K. R. 60
Subramaniam, T. N. 53 & n
Śuddhodana 106n
Sūdharmā 120, 121n
Sūhastin 122
Sūdāra 110
Sūlīma 112n
Sukhabodhinī 74
Sukcosala 112n
Sulasā 93
Sumitrādatta 116 n
Sumukha 104
Suparnā 18
Supārvā, Supārvanātha 37, 48
Śūra 105, 107, 110
Sūrascena 107
Śūrāṣṭra 108, 112n
Śūrvyadeva 105
Śūrpāra, Śūrpāraka 107, 112n
Śūrya 91n, 93
Śūryaprajñapti 73, 84n
Śūryāraka 112n
Śūryavatī Śiśi Gajapati dynasty 98
Susthita 43
Śūtrakṛṣṭāṅga 73, 132-34
Suvarnā 135
Śvetāmbara sect 5-6, 26-27, 38, 73, 76, 78-79
Śyādvāda 7, 34
Tācambādi 68
Tālācara 133
Tamaḥprabhā 17
Tāmāsa 110n
Tamilnadu 3, 47, 56-57
Tapa 26
Tāpasa 107, 110
Tarālasvāmin 115
Tattvārthasātra 26
Taurīka 106n
Tawney, C. H. 96n, 101n, 106n
Tevāram 48, 52, 53n
INDEX

Triśāla 40, 119, 135 & n
Triśira 112n
Tulīṅga 107, 108n, 110
Tuṣḍirāhvaya-Maṇḍalārha Sugiri 63n
Udbhāsātra 120
Udbhayabhāṣakavakravarta 67
Uccanāgari, Uccenāgari 42-43
Udāchi 135
Udayana 106
Udayendiraṃ copper plates 60
Udāyin 121
Ulkā 88
Ulūka 112n
Umāsvātī 16
Upādhyāya 28
Upadhye, A. N. 103n
Upasargaharastotra 84
Upreti, G. B. 1, 5
Uśīmalai 46
Uśīnārā 112n
Utsarpigi 18
Uttampālaiyam 66
Uttamarṇa 108n, 110n
Uttamaṉvarṇa 108 and n, 110
Uttaradāsaka 36
Uttarādhyānasūtra 73, 82, 132, 135 ; nirukti 82
Uttarakuru 16
Uttarapurāṇa 126n
Uttiramerūr Perumagar 69
Uvāsagadasāna 120, 123n
Uvasagaharapāṣa 72, 74, 80-81
Vācaka 45
Vaccaliya 42
Vaduvān 100, 101 & n
Vaidyā-Kāśmirā 112n
Vaibhāra hill 126-27
Vaidarba 107
Vaidehadatta 119
Vaidēti 119
Vaidīsā 108
Vaikunṭha Perumāḷ temple 60
Vaimānika 136

Therāvali 96
Tikānīkāyātā 71n
Tilokapānagati 4, 75, 96, 103, 114 & n, 115
Tilthogali Paimniya 123n
Tirakkol 63, 65
Tirṇakārṇa 107
Tirthkalpa 36, 124n
Tirthaṅkara 2, 7, 19, 21-22, 24, 28
Tirunāługondai 65
Tirachirapalli 47, 50, 63 ; cave inscription 54
Tiruḷaṅkānasambandar 69
Tirukkāṭāmpallai Āḻvār 64
Tirumalai 55, 62, 63 & n, 65-67
Tirumalavāḍi 63
Tirumāḷaiśai 53
Tirumangai 53
Tirunāḷugondai 62-63, 68
Tirunāṭharkuppu 47 ; epitaphs 50
Tirunāṭukkaraior Purāṇam 52, 53 & n
Tirunelveli 47, 55, 66
Tiruppādirippuliyūr 52
Tiruppāṇamalai 47, 55, 61-63
Tirupparambūr 59, 64
Tirupparuttikkuntam 53, 57, 64-65, 67
Tiruvadigai 53-54
Tiruvakkīḷaṉ Taṁbirānār 69
Tiruvalluvar 56
Tiruvānāmālai 64
Toṇḍaimanḍalam 6, 47, 50-53, 56, 60-61, 65-66
Toṇḍarādippodi 53
Toṇḍur 62 ; Olakkūr 62
Tosaliṭṭura 82
Trainloyanātha 67 ; temple 68
Trigarta 107
Trijaṭa 112n
Trikuṭa-basti 64
Tripura 108
Tripuri 98
Vairadeva 126
Vairi 42 & n
Vaiśāli 21, 118, 120, 123n, 125n
Vaiśālikā 119
Vaiṣṇava cave 126
Vaiśravana 93
Vajrakhandika 108, 110
Vajrānandin 53, 58-59
Vajravāṃśa 82
Vajrin 43n
Valaiyapati 55
Valimalai 66
Valluvar 51
Vālukāprabhā 17
Valuvāmolipperumpalli 62
Vāmanāthapura 70
Vanaṃśāla 104
Vanavāsa, Vanavāsaka 108n, 112n
Vanāga 107, 112n
Vanijyagrāma 120
Vānīya 43n
Varāha 72-73, 100 & n
Varāhamibira 4-5, 71, 74, 78, 83, 84
& n, 86, 88, 89 & n, 94-95, 111
Vārāhī Samhita 72, 80n
Vāraṇa 42
Vāraṇagana 44, 45n
Vardhamāna 11, 37, 39, 63-64, 100,
101 & n; temple 53, 57, 64-65,
67-68
Vardhamāna Mahāvira 9
Vardhamanaperiyādacal 62
Varuṇa, Varuṇadeva 93, 105
Vasantaṇandin 127
Vasiṣṭha 91n
Vasāvāsa 25
Vasudeva 93, 102, 105, 116
Vāsudeva-Keśa 115
Vasudeva Sīḍḍāntabhājāra 46
Vasukunda 125
Vasumitra 114
Vasupūja 23, 120
Vātā 135
Vātadhāma 108n
Vātavāna 107, 108n
Vatsa 108n
Vatsaliya 43n
Vatsarāja 100
Vedā 55, 60-63
Vegavati 102
Veṅgur 69
Vema, O. P. 1
Vesālie 119
Vidarbha 112n
Vidāraṇya 60
Vidchā 16, 108
Videhadattā 19
Vidhaṇaivasalama 119
Vidhyādha 102
Vidhyādiri 42, 43n
Vidyut 135
Vijaya 105
Vijayanagar 54-55, 67
Vijaya-Nandivikramavarman 65
Vijaya-nayakan 68
Vikramacola 64
Vikramāditya 5, 82
Vilappakkam 46, 62
Vimala-Srı̊yārya Tirtha-palli 61
Vimāna 18, 23
Vindhyā 101 & n, 112n
Vindhyavasini 115 & n
Vipula hill 27, 126n
Vīr 97 & n
Virakralapcrumpalli 63
Viramana 132
Virarājendra 64;opperumpalli 64, 68
Virasaṅga 68; Srpratīṣṭhācārya 68
Virāṃśāna-rayanti 27
Virasena 100n
Viratāṇam 54
Viravīra 64
Viravirajinalaya 64
Viśala 99
Viṣar 69n
Viṣṇugopā 51
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Page References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Vishnukumara</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viga Purana</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Visvakarma</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Visvamalla</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Visvamitra</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vitihotra</td>
<td>108n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vivahapatana</td>
<td>71n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vrjli-Iicchavci</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vrk-Andhaka</td>
<td>108n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vrkartiha</td>
<td>107, 108n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vrsana</td>
<td>112n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vrsi</td>
<td>102-03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vyantarara</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vyavahara-bhashya</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vyavaharasutra</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson</td>
<td>97n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winternitz</td>
<td>76n, 79n, 97n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watters</td>
<td>107n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yadivasaha</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yaksa</td>
<td>13, 24, 132, 135; bhattari 61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yaksi—Dharma Devi</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siddhavikā</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yakshi</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yapaniya-sangha</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yapparudgalam</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yasobhadra</td>
<td>74, 83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yasobhadra-suri</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yasovarman</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yatirishabha</td>
<td>103, 114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yavana</td>
<td>107, 112n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yogayatra</td>
<td>71n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yudhisthira</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CORRIGENDA

Page 9, line 15.—Read—Rṣabha
,, 28, note 8.—Read—Stevenson
,, 38, line 20.—Read—Comprehending
,, 48, line 11.—Read—Devāram (rā)
,, 50, line 6.—Read—Bhadrabāhu
,, 57, line 5.—Read—manuscript
,, 60, line 1.—Read—Akalaṅka
,, ,, line 3.—Read—Niśkalaṅka
,, 72, line 17.—Read—newborn
,, ,, line 24.—Read—efforts
,, 74, line 22.—Read—Pātaliputra
,, 75, line 24.—Read—Śrutakevalins
,, 76, line 25.—Read—Rājaśekharasūri
,, 79, note 28.—Read—Winternitz
,, 80, line 15.—Read—niryuktis
,, 85, note 49, line 4.—Read—introduction
,, 96, line 5.—Read—We had


5. *Krṣṇa in History and Legend* by the late Dr. B. B. Majumdar, 1969, pp. 307. Price Rs. 20.00.


N. B.—To be had of the Agents of the University of Calcutta.